## ERGE IDEON

Rational spline collocation for boundary value problems

DISSERTATIONES MATHEMATICAE UNIVERSITATIS TARTUENSIS

## ERGE IDEON

Rational spline collocation for boundary value problems

Faculty of Mathematics and Computer Science, University of Tartu, Tartu, Estonia
Dissertation has been accepted for the commencement of the degree of Doctor of Philosophy (PhD) in mathematics on May 8, 2013 by the Council of the Institute of Mathematics, Faculty of Mathematics and Computer Science, University of Tartu.

Supervisor:
Cand. Sc., Assoc. Prof. Peeter Oja
University of Tartu
Tartu, Estonia

Opponents:
Dr. math., Assoc. Prof. Natalia Budkina
Riga Technical University
Riga, Latvia

Cand. Sc., Prof. Jaan Janno
Tallinn University of Technology
Tallinn, Estonia

Commencement will take place on June 26, 2013 at 11.15 in Liivi 2-403.
Publication of this dissertation has been granted by the Estonian Doctoral School of Mathematics and Statistics, by the Estonian Science Foundation Grant No. 8313 and by the Estonian Targeted Financing Project SF0180081s08.


European Union
European Social Fund


ISSN 1024-4212
ISBN 978-9949-32-303-6 (print)
ISBN 978-9949-32-304-3 (pdf)

Copyright: Erge Ideon, 2013
University of Tartu Press
www.tyk.ee
Order No. 234

## Contents

1 Introduction ..... 7
2 Representation of linear/linear rational splines ..... 13
2.1 Representation by spline values and first moments ..... 14
2.2 Representation by spline values and first derivatives in midpoints of subintervals ..... 15
2.3 Representation by spline values ..... 17
3 Representation of quadratic/linear rational splines ..... 19
3.1 Representation by spline values and first moments ..... 20
3.2 Representation by spline values and second moments ..... 22
4 Linear/linear rational spline interpolation ..... 24
4.1 Description of the method ..... 24
4.2 Transformation of the system ..... 25
4.3 Expansions of the interpolant ..... 30
4.4 Superconvergence rates ..... 31
5 Quadratic/linear rational spline interpolation ..... 33
5.1 Description of the method ..... 33
5.2 Transformation of the system and second moments of the interpolant ..... 34
5.3 Expansions of the interpolant ..... 38
5.4 Superconvergence rates ..... 41
6 Linear/linear rational spline collocation ..... 42
6.1 Description of the spline collocation method ..... 44
6.2 Transformation of the system and main properties of the derivatives ..... 44
6.3 Application of fixed point principle ..... 49
6.4 Convergence estimates ..... 56
7 Quadratic/linear rational spline collocation ..... 60
7.1 Description of the spline collocation method ..... 60
7.2 Transformation of the system ..... 61
7.3 Estimate of the error of approximate solution ..... 63
7.4 Transformation of internal equations ..... 77
7.5 Existence of the solution for collocation problem ..... 84
7.6 Convergence estimates ..... 87
8 Numerical examples ..... 91
8.1 Linear/linear rational spline interpolation ..... 92
8.2 Quadratic/linear rational spline interpolation ..... 92
8.3 Linear/linear rational spline collocation ..... 93
8.4 Quadratic/linear rational spline collocation ..... 95
Bibliography ..... 97
Kokkuvõte (Summary in Estonian) ..... 101
Acknowledgements ..... 104
Curriculum Vitae ..... 105
Elulookirjeldus (Curriculum Vitae in Estonian) ..... 106
List of publications ..... 107

## Chapter 1

## Introduction

Boundary value problems arise in several branches of scientific and engineering problems. For example problems involving the wave equation are often stated as boundary value problems. A large class of important boundary value problems are the Sturm-Liouville ones. There are many boundary value problems in mathematical physics corresponding to second order equations, e.g., in the studies of vibrations of a membrane one has to solve a homogeneous boundary value problem. Some model problems and most common general forms are presented in [8].

A boundary value problem consists of a differential equation on a given interval and an explicit condition (or conditions) that a solution must satisfy at one or several points. A simple and common form for a two point boundary value problem is

$$
\begin{array}{rr}
y^{\prime \prime}(x)+p(x) y^{\prime}(x)+q(x) y(x)=f(x), & x \in(a, b), \\
y(a)=\alpha_{1}, & y(b)=\alpha_{2}
\end{array}
$$

where $\alpha_{1}, \alpha_{2}$ and the endpoints $a, b$ are known constants. Traditional methods for approximate solution of boundary value problems are finite difference method which only gives a discrete solution, and collocation method with polynomial splines. Many aspects of finite difference methods are introduced in [17, 20]. Quite a number of authors have studied collocation based on polynomial functions. Polynomial splines of order $m$ (or degree $m-1$ ) are piecewise polynomials and usually defined in such a way that they are $m-2$ times continuously differentiable over the domain. Piecewise polynomials were used in approximation theory already in the early 1900s but the terminology splinefunction was first introduced by Schoenberg in 1946 [49]. Schoenberg states that he started to use this terminology by the connection of piecewise polynomials with a certain mechanical device called a spline. This is a thin rod of some elastic material equipped with a groove and a set of weights with attached arms designed to fit into the groove. It appears that the use of piecewise polynomial functions offers significant advantages - it is simpler and more powerful (see, e.g., [14]). Piecewise polynomial functions are more
adaptable to special problems too. Up until 1960 the theory of spline functions had a rather modest development and prior to the mid-1960s there were only a few papers which dealt with the problem of how well classes of smooth functions can be approximated by piecewise polynomials or splines.

For the collocation method quite general results about stability and convergence with polynomials for boundary value problems are obtained in [59, 60]. Piecewise polynomials are used as approximate solution for the same problem in [44]. Cubic spline approximation at the solution of the two point boundary value problem for second order linear differential equation is treated in [6, 10, 22] and also for fourth order boundary value problems in [23]. Collocation with some higher order splines for the second order boundary value problems is studied in [1]. Some surveys about other numerical methods for boundary value problems in ordinary differential equations could be found in [5, 28, 29]. Collocation procedures using piecewise polynomial functions with Gauss collocation points are applied to two quasilinear second order differential equations in [56]. Collocation for systems of boundary value problems with nonlinear differential equations are studied in [45] and linear systems of first order ordinary differential equations are considered with a regular singularity at one endpoint, under some assumptions on the smoothness of the coefficients that appear in the equations and in the boundary conditions in [13]. In [7] collocation by piecewise Hermite cubic polynomials is made for two point boundary value problem and uniform convergence together with some superconvergence for the derivatives is obtained. These problems are dealt with in several books about spline theory $[12,53]$ and numerical solution of differential equations. Several interpolatory approximations for collocation solutions to systems of two point boundary value problems are studied in [42]. Among others we refer the reader to [8] for thorough treatment and comprehensive bibliography and to works by Stechkin and Subbotin [57] and Schumaker [55] which give a comprehensive treatment of the theory of numerical analysis of polynomial spline functions. The paper [43] contains 93 references and is also useful as an introduction to the extensive literature on projection methods for the numerical solution of two point boundary value problems. For quadratic and cubic spline collocation method the convergence rate $O\left(h^{2}\right)$ is known [30, 39]. In some cases, the actual error is less for the quadratic splines and in other cases, the error is less for the cubic splines, see [39].

In the early 1900s there was also quite extensive development of interpolation using the piecewise polynomials. Interpolation is the most simple way to reconstruct a function according to discrete data. In a typical interpolation problem we suppose that we have $n$ distinct datapoints $a=x_{1}<\ldots<x_{n}=b$ and values $y_{i}$, $i=1, \ldots, n$. We look for a continuous function $f$ from a given class of functions in a way such that the graph of $f$ passes through the given set of data points, that is, it satisfies $f\left(x_{i}\right)=y_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$, and the points $x_{i}$ are called the interpolation nodes. The intensive development of the theory of interpolating splines began in the early 1960s. It led to achieving error bounds. Some of the early contributors
are Ahlberg and Nilson [2], Birkhoff and de Boor [11], Ahlberg, Nilson, and Walsh [3, 4], Atkinson [9], Schoenberg [50, 51, 52].

Let us mention that $O\left(h^{2}\right)$ convergence rate of quadratic spline collocation for boundary value problems is based on superconvergence property of interpolating splines. This was discovered in [30] and developed extensively in [35, 39]. It was shown in [39] that the main part of error at quadratic spline collocation is actually several times less than was obtained in [30].

There is also the possibility of using piecewise rational functions. The first development of nonlinear spline spaces with the rational functions and generalizations of them was carried out by Schaback [46] and by Werner [61]. A very general space of rational splines was also defined by Schumaker [54]. A generalization for the results of [46] is presented in [16]. Since then various classes of rational splines have been studied. For example in [18] a class of rational $C^{2}$ quadratic/quadratic and in [19] a class of $C^{1}$ cubic/cubic splines for interpolation are considered. In [34] algorithms for interpolation by rational splines containing, as a special case, parabolic splines and piecewise-linear interpolation is discussed. A class of rational $C^{2}$ cubic/quadratic splines is studied in [24]. The accuracy $O\left(h^{3}\right)$ or $O\left(h^{4}\right)$ is achieved. These splines may have some advantages over rational linear/linear and quadratic/linear splines because of their possibly larger choice of coefficients but low degree rational splines are simpler and more convenient to use. They do not lose the accuracy too. For a smooth function $y$ and interpolating linear/linear rational spline $S$ it is known that $\|S-y\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{3}\right)$, see, e.g., [25, 37]. For consistent data, the linear/linear rational spline interpolant of class $C^{1}$ always exists and is unique [37, 38]. In [25], the expansions on subintervals via the derivatives of the smooth function to interpolate could be found. They give the superconvergence of the spline values and its derivatives in certain points. In interpolation the linear/linear rational splines of class $C^{1}$ have the same accuracy as the classical quadratic splines and none of them have advantage in comparison of real errors $[25,32]$. In such circumstances, it is natural to pose the question about relation between convergence rates of quadratic and linear/linear rational spline collocation for boundary value problems. This is one of the main topics of this thesis. In collocation with quadratic spline $S$ it is known that $\|S-y\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{2}\right)$, where $y$ is the solution of the problem. For the proof see, e.g., [30, 39]. We will study such a problem in the case of linear/linear rational spline. We will also study a quadratic/linear rational spline collocation for boundary value problems and compare it to the cubic spline case. For the latter one the convergence rate $O\left(h^{2}\right)$ is known as well. Let us point out that quadratic/linear rational interpolating splines of class $C^{2}$ have the same accuracy as the classical cubic interpolating splines [37]. In some cases, the error is less for the cubic splines and in some cases, the error is less for the quadratic/linear rational splines. For a strictly convex (or strictly concave) smooth function $y$ and interpolating quadratic/linear rational spline $S$ it is known that $\|S-y\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{4}\right)$, see, e.g., [36, 37]. A quadratic/linear rational spline interpolant of class $C^{2}$ exists and is unique and strictly convex for
any strictly convex data [47]. It should be effective to use these splines in seeking the solutions with singularities of differential and integral equations. For the cubic splines, the expansions on subintervals via the derivatives of the smooth function to interpolate could be found, e.g., in [58]. They give the superconvergence of the spline values and its derivatives in certain points. We will study such a problem in the case of quadratic/linear rational spline interpolation.

While the interpolation problem is a linear one, the linear/linear rational spline interpolation as well as quadratic/linear rational spline interpolation is, in nature, a nonlinear method because it leads to a nonlinear system with respect to the spline parameters. Nevertheless, the complexity of these rational spline interpolation methods is the same as in polynomial spline case. It was shown in [15] that any strict convexity preserving interpolation method having certain regularity properties cannot be linear. Hopefully, similar result should also hold for strict monotonicity preservation. The problem of shape preserving interpolation has been considered by several authors [18, 19, 21, 24, 41, 48]. Firstly they have kept in mind monotonicity and convexity. A review with 164 references of shape preserving approximation methods and algorithms for approximating univariate functions or discrete data is given in [31]. Main ideas about the methods of solving nonlinear systems of equations could be found in [40].

We can say about the linear/linear rational spline collocation method that it is, in nature, a nonlinear method and it does not work in the case of nonmonotone solution. Fortunately, the method proposed in this thesis could be implemented so that it has the same complexity as collocation with quadratic splines, e.g., each step of Newton's method requires the solution of linear system with banded matrix and the number of steps is limited (relatively small). The practical solution process could be organized in such a way that on each step of Newton's iteration one has to solve a linear system having diagonal dominance in rows of its banded matrix. The solution of these systems, e.g., by Gaussian elimination, is known to be stable with respect to small errors in calculations and such kind of stability concerns also Newton's method itself. In opposite situation an adaptive strategy where in the region of strict monotonicity rational pieces and elsewhere polynomial pieces are used is a reasonable approach. Then once again the solution by adaptive method could give considerably better result at the same starting information (mainly the values of functions in differential equation). This procedure has the same complexity as quadratic spline collocation. However, to prove the existence of this combined spline as approximate solution in collocation method and to find an adequate error estimate is a challenge beyond this thesis. The theory of adaptive interpolation is developed, e.g., in [47] with cubic polynomial and quadratic/linear rational splines and in [38] for any data with quadratic polynomial and linear/linear rational splines. In [47] cubic polynomial and quadratic/linear rational pieces to retain strict convexity in the regions of strict convexity of data are used. The existence of such a coconvex spline interpolant is proved if data have weak alternation of second order divided differences on cubic sections. It
is remarkable that the existence of those adaptive interpolating splines was quite complicated to prove. At spline collocation for boundary value problems this adaptive strategy needs to be investigated in future. It is natural that this research can be based on the results about rational spline collocation. Keeping this in mind, the main purpose of this thesis is to show the existence of linear/linear rational spline and quadratic/linear rational spline as approximate solution in collocation method for boundary value problems and also comparison of error estimates with respect to quadratic and cubic spline collocation respectively.

In the following we give a brief overview of the dissertation by chapters. The present work consists of eight chapters.

In Chapter 1 we already gave an overview of boundary value problems, examples of applications and a short review of main books and papers on spline collocation method with polynomial and rational splines.

In Chapter 2 we present the linear/linear rational splines and give three different representations: by spline values and first moments, by spline values and first derivatives in midpoints of subintervals and by spline values. There is also given the number of free parameters and some general remarks about linear/linear rational splines.

In Chapter 3 there are given two representations for quadratic/linear rational splines (by spline values and first moments and by spline values and second moments) as well as some general comments.

Chapter 4 is devoted to linear/linear rational spline interpolation problem. Firstly, the description of the method is given where linear/linear rational spline representation by spline values is used. In this chapter we show that for the interpolating linear/linear rational splines we obtain $\left\|S\left(x_{i}\right)-y\left(x_{i}\right)\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{4}\right)$ on uniform mesh $x_{i}=a+i h, i=0, \ldots, n$, and prove also the superconvergence of order $h^{3}$ for the first derivative and of order $h^{2}$ for the second derivative of $S$ in certain points. In the end of the chapter, for comparison, the expansions of quadratic spline $S$ and its derivatives are given. The results of Chapter 4 are published in [25].

In Chapter 5 we investigate the interpolation with quadratic/linear rational splines. As in previous chapter we start by giving the description of the method. In this chapter a representation by spline values and second moments is used. On a uniform mesh $x_{i}=a+i h, i=0, \ldots, n$, in the case of sufficiently smooth function $y$ the expansions of interpolating quadratic/linear rational spline $S$ and its derivatives are obtained. They give the superconvergence of order $h^{4}$ for the first derivative, of order $h^{3}$ for the second derivative and of order $h^{2}$ for the third derivative of $S$ in certain points. We compare the results with cubic spline interpolation method. The results of Chapter 5 are published in [26].

Chapter 6 is devoted to the study of the linear/linear rational spline collocation method. We use the spline representation by spline values and at first we repre-
sent the collocation method. Then the necessary transformations are established and the use of the Bohl-Brouwer fixed point theorem is shown. The convergence estimates using the special interpolation points are finally achieved and stated in Theorem 6.1. For the linear/linear rational spline $S$ on uniform mesh it holds $\|S-y\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{2}\right)$, where the solution $y$ of the boundary value problem is a strictly monotone function. Established bound of error for the collocation method gives a dependence on the solution of the boundary value problem and its coefficients. We prove also convergence rates $\left\|S^{\prime}-y^{\prime}\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{2}\right),\left\|S^{\prime \prime}-y^{\prime \prime}\right\|_{\infty}=O(h)$ and the superconvergence of order $h^{2}$ for the second derivative of $S$ in certain points. The results of this chapter have been submitted for publication in [27].

In Chapter 7 we investigate the quadratic/linear rational spline collocation method. As in previous chapter we start by introducing the collocation method with quadratic/linear rational splines. At this time the spline representation by spline values and first moments is used. For the quadratic/linear rational spline $S$ on uniform mesh with the solution $y$ of the boundary value problem which is a strictly convex (or strictly concave) function it holds $\|S-y\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{2}\right)$. We prove also convergence rates $\left\|S^{\prime}-y^{\prime}\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{2}\right)$ and $\left\|S^{\prime \prime}-y^{\prime \prime}\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{2}\right)$.

In Chapter 8 there are given numerical tests which totally support the theoretical analysis.

## Chapter 2

## Representation of linear/linear rational splines

In this chapter we introduce three representations for linear/linear rational splines.
Consider a uniform partition of the interval $[a, b]$ with knots $x_{i}=a+i h$, $i=0, \ldots, n, h=(b-a) / n, n \in \mathbb{N}$. We also need the points $\xi_{i}=x_{i-1}+h / 2$, $i=1, \ldots, n$.

Linear/linear rational spline is a function $S \in C^{1}[a, b]$ of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(x)=a_{i}+\frac{c_{i}\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)}{1+d_{i}\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)}, \quad x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right] \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $1+d_{i}\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)>0$. Let us point out that, in general, a linear/linear rational function on each particular interval $\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$ may have the form

$$
S(x)=\frac{\hat{a_{i}}+\hat{b_{i}} x}{\hat{c_{i}}+\hat{d}_{i} x}
$$

where $\hat{c}_{i}+\hat{d}_{i} x<0$ or $\hat{c}_{i}+\hat{d}_{i} x>0$, but it could be transformed into (2.1).
Note that a straightforward reasoning shows that if there are two representations for function $S$ on interval $\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$, i.e.,

$$
S(x)=a_{i}+\frac{c_{i}\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)}{1+d_{i}\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)}
$$

and

$$
S(x)=\bar{a}_{i}+\frac{\bar{c}_{i}\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)}{1+\bar{d}_{i}\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)}
$$

with arbitrary $\xi_{i} \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$, then $\bar{a}_{i}=a_{i}$ and $\bar{c}_{i}=c_{i}$. If, in addition, $\bar{c}_{i}=c_{i} \neq 0$, then $\bar{d}_{i}=d_{i}$.

According to the representation (2.1) we have $3 n$ parameters to determine for constructing the spline. We require for $C^{1}$ continuity of $S$ on $[a, b]$ which involves $2(n-1)$ conditions, namely that $S$ and $S^{\prime}$ must be continuous at all interior knots $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1}$. That means the number of free parameters is $3 n-2(n-1)=n+2$.

Observe at once that on $\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime}(x)=\frac{c_{i}}{\left(1+d_{i}\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)\right)^{2}} \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

which means that $S$ being in $C^{1}[a, b]$ is strictly increasing or strictly decreasing or constant on $[a, b]$.

### 2.1 Representation by spline values and first moments

Let $S\left(\xi_{i}\right)=S_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$, and $S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)=m_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n$. We call by first moments the parameters $m_{i}$. From (2.1) and (2.2) we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
S_{i} & =a_{i} \\
m_{i-1} & =\frac{c_{i}}{\left(1-\frac{h d_{i}}{2}\right)^{2}} \\
m_{i} & =\frac{c_{i}}{\left(1+\frac{h d_{i}}{2}\right)^{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Consider the case $m_{i-1}, m_{i}>0$ or $m_{i-1}, m_{i}<0$. Otherwise we have $m_{i}=0$, $i=0, \ldots, n$, and the spline $S$ is constant.

From previous system we can uniquely express the parameters

$$
\begin{aligned}
& a_{i}=S_{i}, \\
& c_{i}=\frac{4 m_{i-1}}{\left(\left(\frac{m_{i-1}}{m_{i}}\right)^{1 / 2}+1\right)^{2}}, \\
& d_{i}=\frac{2\left(\left(\frac{m_{i-1}}{m_{i}}\right)^{1 / 2}-1\right)}{h\left(\left(\frac{m_{i-1}}{m_{i}}\right)^{1 / 2}+1\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

Replacing them in (2.1) we obtain for $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$

$$
S(x)=S_{i}+\frac{4 h m_{i-1}\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)}{\left(\left(\frac{m_{i-1}}{m_{i}}\right)^{1 / 2}+1\right)\left(h\left(\left(\frac{m_{i-1}}{m_{i}}\right)^{1 / 2}+1\right)+2\left(\left(\frac{m_{i-1}}{m_{i}}\right)^{1 / 2}-1\right)\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)\right)}
$$

Setting $x=x_{i-1}+\tau h, \tau \in[0,1]$, the representation of linear/linear rational spline by spline values and first moments is

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(x)=S_{i}+\frac{h m_{i-1}(2 \tau-1)}{\left(\left(\frac{m_{i-1}}{m_{i}}\right)^{1 / 2}+1\right)\left(1+\tau\left(\left(\frac{m_{i-1}}{m_{i}}\right)^{1 / 2}-1\right)\right)}, \quad x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right] \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

This also gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
S^{\prime}(x) & =\frac{m_{i-1}}{\left(1+\tau\left(\left(\frac{m_{i-1}}{m_{i}}\right)^{1 / 2}-1\right)\right)^{2}} \\
S^{\prime \prime}(x) & =-\frac{2 m_{i-1}\left(\left(\frac{m_{i-1}}{m_{i}}\right)^{1 / 2}-1\right)}{h\left(1+\tau\left(\left(\frac{m_{i-1}}{m_{i}}\right)^{1 / 2}-1\right)\right)^{3}}
\end{aligned}
$$

The continuity of $S^{\prime}$ is guaranteed by the notation $S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)=m_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n$. From (2.3) we get

$$
S\left(x_{i}-0\right)=S_{i}+\frac{h m_{i}}{\left(\frac{m_{i}}{m_{i-1}}\right)^{1 / 2}+1}
$$

and

$$
S\left(x_{i}+0\right)=S_{i+1}-\frac{h m_{i}}{\left(\frac{m_{i}}{m_{i+1}}\right)^{1 / 2}+1}
$$

so the continuity of $S$ at the interior knots, i.e., $S\left(x_{i}-0\right)=S\left(x_{i}+0\right), i=1, \ldots, n-1$, leads to the internal equations

$$
m_{i}\left(\frac{1}{\left(\frac{m_{i}}{m_{i-1}}\right)^{1 / 2}+1}+\frac{1}{\left(\frac{m_{i}}{m_{i+1}}\right)^{1 / 2}+1}\right)=\frac{S_{i+1}-S_{i}}{h}, \quad i=1, \ldots, n-1
$$

### 2.2 Representation by spline values and first derivatives in midpoints of subintervals

Using the notations $S\left(x_{i}\right)=S_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n, S^{\prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)=m_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$, we get from (2.1) and (2.2)

$$
m_{i}=c_{i}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
S_{i-1} & =a_{i}-\frac{h c_{i}}{2-h d_{i}}=a_{i}-\frac{h m_{i}}{2-h d_{i}},  \tag{2.4}\\
S_{i} & =a_{i}+\frac{h c_{i}}{2+h d_{i}}=a_{i}+\frac{h m_{i}}{2+h d_{i}} . \tag{2.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Again, we assume that the spline is strictly increasing or strictly decreasing, otherwise it is constant and $m_{i}=0, i=1, \ldots, n$.

Firstly, for expressing the parameters $a_{i}, b_{i}$ and $c_{i}$, we find $S_{i}-S_{i-1}$. That is by (2.4) and (2.5)

$$
S_{i}-S_{i-1}=a_{i}+\frac{h m_{i}}{2+h d_{i}}-\left(a_{i}-\frac{h m_{i}}{2-h d_{i}}\right)=\frac{h m_{i}}{2+h d_{i}}+\frac{h m_{i}}{2-h d_{i}}
$$

We obtain immediately

$$
d_{i}= \pm \frac{2}{h}\left(1-\frac{m_{i}}{\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}}\right)^{1 / 2}
$$

Then from (2.5) we get

$$
a_{i}=S_{i}-\frac{h m_{i}}{2\left(1 \pm\left(1-\frac{m_{i}}{\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}}\right)^{1 / 2}\right)}
$$

and, in addition,

$$
c_{i}=m_{i} .
$$

Replacing $a_{i}, c_{i}, d_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$, in (2.1) we have the representation by spline values and first derivatives in midpoints of subintervals

$$
S(x)=S_{i}-\frac{h m_{i}}{2 \pm 2\left(1-\frac{m_{i}}{\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}}\right)^{1 / 2}}+\frac{m_{i}\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)}{1 \pm \frac{2}{h}\left(1-\frac{m_{i}}{\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}}\right)^{1 / 2}\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)},
$$

or setting $x=x_{i-1}+h \tau, \tau \in[0,1]$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(x)=S_{i}-\frac{h m_{i}(1-\tau)}{\left(1 \pm\left(1-\frac{m_{i}}{\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}}\right)^{1 / 2}\right)\left(1 \pm\left(1-\frac{m_{i}}{\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}}\right)^{1 / 2}(2 \tau-1)\right)} \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

This also gives us

$$
\begin{align*}
& S^{\prime}(x)= \frac{m_{i}}{\left(1 \pm\left(1-\frac{m_{i}}{\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}}\right)^{1 / 2}(2 \tau-1)\right)^{2}}  \tag{2.7}\\
& S^{\prime \prime}(x)= \mp 4 m_{i}\left(1-\frac{m_{i}}{\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}}\right)^{1 / 2} \\
& h\left(1 \pm\left(1-\frac{m_{i}}{\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}}\right)^{1 / 2}(2 \tau-1)\right)^{3}
\end{align*}
$$

The continuity conditions of $S^{\prime}$ can be written as $S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}-0\right)=S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}+0\right)$ or with the help of (2.7) in the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{m_{i}}{\left(1 \pm\left(1-\frac{m_{i}}{\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}}\right)^{1 / 2}\right)^{2}}=\frac{m_{i+1}}{\left(1 \mp\left(1-\frac{m_{i+1}}{\frac{S_{i+1}-S_{i}}{h}}\right)^{1 / 2}\right)^{2}}  \tag{2.8}\\
i=1, \ldots, n-1
\end{gather*}
$$

Note that in this representation we have two different splines with same parameters $S_{i-1}, S_{i}$ and $m_{i}$, one with + and the other with - in the representation (2.6).

### 2.3 Representation by spline values

Let $S\left(x_{i}\right)=S_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n$, and $S\left(\xi_{i}\right)=\bar{S}_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$. We assume that the spline is strictly increasing or strictly decreasing. We get from (2.1)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\bar{S}_{i} & =a_{i} \\
S_{i-1} & =a_{i}-\frac{h c_{i}}{2-h d_{i}} \\
S_{i} & =a_{i}+\frac{h c_{i}}{2+h d_{i}}
\end{aligned}
$$

This allows to express uniquely $a_{i}, c_{i}$ and $d_{i}$ via the spline values as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& a_{i}=\bar{S}_{i} \\
& c_{i}=\frac{4\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)}{h\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)}, \\
& d_{i}=\frac{2\left(2 \bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}-S_{i}\right)}{h\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

After replacing the obtained parameters in (2.1) we have the representation by spline values

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(x)=\bar{S}_{i}+\frac{4\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)}{h\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)+2\left(\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\right)\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)}, x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right], \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

or by setting $x=x_{i-1}+h \tau, \tau \in[0,1]$,

$$
S(x)=\bar{S}_{i}+\frac{\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)(2 \tau-1)}{(2 \tau-1) \bar{S}_{i}-\tau S_{i-1}+(1-\tau) S_{i}}
$$

This also gives for $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$

$$
\begin{gather*}
S^{\prime}(x)=\frac{4 h\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)}{\left(h\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)+2\left(\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\right)\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)\right)^{2}}  \tag{2.10}\\
S^{\prime \prime}(x)=-\frac{16 h\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\right)}{\left(h\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)+2\left(\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\right)\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)\right)^{3}} . \tag{2.11}
\end{gather*}
$$

When the continuity of $S$ is guaranteed by the representation (2.9), the continuity of $S^{\prime}$ i.e., $S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}-0\right)=S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}+0\right), i=1, \ldots, n-1$, at interior knots with the help of (2.10) leads to the internal equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)}{\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}}=\frac{\left(\bar{S}_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)}{S_{i+1}-\bar{S}_{i+1}}, \quad i=1, \ldots, n-1 \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Chapter 3

## Representation of quadratic/linear rational splines

In this chapter we introduce two representations for quadratic/linear rational splines.

Consider a uniform partition of the interval $[a, b]$ with knots $x_{i}=a+i h$, $i=0, \ldots, n, h=(b-a) / n, n \in \mathbb{N}$.

Quadratic/linear rational spline is a function $S \in C^{2}[a, b]$ and on each particular subinterval has the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(x)=a_{i}+b_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)+\frac{c_{i}}{1+d_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)}, \quad x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right] \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $1+d_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)>0$. In general, a quadratic/linear rational function may have the form by five parameters

$$
S(x)=\frac{\hat{a_{i}}+\hat{b_{i}} x+\hat{c_{i}} x^{2}}{\hat{d}_{i}+\hat{e}_{i} x}, \quad x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]
$$

where $\hat{d}_{i}+\hat{e}_{i} x<0$ or $\hat{d}_{i}+\hat{e}_{i} x>0$, but it could be transformed into (3.1).
From (3.1) we have for $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime}(x)=b_{i}-\frac{c_{i} d_{i}}{\left(1+d_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2}} \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime \prime}(x)=\frac{2 c_{i} d_{i}^{2}}{\left(1+d_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)\right)^{3}} \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

which means that $S$ or $-S$ is strictly convex or first degree polynomial.

Let us note that if there are two different representations for function $S$ on interval $\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$, i.e.,

$$
S(x)=a_{i}+b_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)+\frac{c_{i}}{1+d_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)}
$$

and

$$
S(x)=\bar{a}_{i}+\bar{b}_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)+\frac{\bar{c}_{i}}{1+\bar{d}_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)}
$$

then in the assumption $\bar{c}_{i}=c_{i} \neq 0$ it follows $\bar{d}_{i}=d_{i}$. In the case $\bar{d}_{i}=d_{i} \neq 0$ we get $\bar{a}_{i}=a_{i}, \bar{b}_{i}=b_{i}, \bar{c}_{i}=c_{i}$ and if $\bar{d}_{i}=d_{i}=0$, then $\bar{b}_{i}=b_{i}$, but $a_{i}$ and $c_{i}$ are not determined uniquely.

According to the representation (3.1) there are 4 parameters on each subinterval to determine, so altogether we have $4 n$ parameters to determine for constructing the spline. From $C^{2}$ continuity of $S$ on $[a, b]$, namely that $S, S^{\prime}$ and $S^{\prime \prime}$ must be continuous at all interior knots $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-1}$, we get $3(n-1)$ additional conditions. That means the number of free parameters is $4 n-3(n-1)=n+3$.

### 3.1 Representation by spline values and first moments

Let us consider a subinterval $\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right], i=1, \ldots, n$. Using

$$
S\left(x_{i-1}\right)=S_{i-1}, \quad S\left(x_{i}\right)=S_{i}, \quad S^{\prime}\left(x_{i-1}\right)=m_{i-1}, \quad S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)=m_{i}
$$

we get from (3.1) and (3.2) a system to determine the parameters $a_{i}, b_{i}, c_{i}$ and $d_{i}$. Namely,

$$
\begin{aligned}
S_{i-1} & =a_{i}+c_{i} \\
S_{i} & =a_{i}+b_{i} h+\frac{c_{i}}{1+d_{i} h}, \\
m_{i-1} & =b_{i}-c_{i} d_{i} \\
m_{i} & =b_{i}-\frac{c_{i} d_{i}}{\left(1+d_{i} h\right)^{2}},
\end{aligned}
$$

which gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
a_{i} & =S_{i-1}-\frac{\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)^{2}\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)}{\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right)^{2}} \\
b_{i} & =m_{i-1}+\frac{\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)^{2}}{h\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
c_{i} & =\frac{\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)^{2}\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)}{\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right)^{2}} \\
d_{i} & =\frac{2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)}{h\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

Denote

$$
e_{i}=\frac{\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)^{2}}{h\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right)^{2}}
$$

and replace $a_{i}, b_{i}, c_{i}$ and $d_{i}$ in (3.1). Then we obtain a representation by spline values and first moments

$$
\begin{aligned}
S(x)= & S_{i-1}-h\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right) e_{i} \\
& +h\left(m_{i-1}+e_{i}\right)\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right)\left(x-x_{i-1}\right) \\
& +\frac{h^{2}\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2} e_{i}}{h\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)+\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right)\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)} \\
& x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

By changing the variable $x=x_{i-1}+\tau h, \tau \in[0,1]$, we get

$$
\begin{align*}
S(x)= & S_{i-1}+\tau h\left(m_{i-1}+e_{i}\right) h\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right) \\
& -h\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right) e_{i}  \tag{3.4}\\
& +\frac{h\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2} e_{i}}{h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)+\tau\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right)}
\end{align*}
$$

From that we can find

$$
\begin{aligned}
S^{\prime}(x)= & m_{i-1}+\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right) e_{i} \\
& -\frac{\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2}\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right) e_{i}}{\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)+\tau\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right)\right)^{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime \prime}(x)=\frac{2\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2}\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right)^{2} e_{i}}{h\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)+\tau\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right)\right)^{3}} \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

The representation of $S$ in terms of $S_{i}$ and $m_{i}$ ensures the continuity of $S$ and $S^{\prime}$. The continuity of $S^{\prime \prime}$ in the interior knots can be expressed by

$$
S^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}-0\right)=S^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}+0\right), \quad i=1, \ldots, n-1
$$

or with the help of (3.5) as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2}}{S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}}=\frac{\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right)^{2}}{h m_{i+1}-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)}, \quad i=1, \ldots, n-1 \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 3.2 Representation by spline values and second moments

Let us use the notation $S\left(x_{i}\right)=S_{i}$ and $S^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)=M_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n$. We call the parameters $M_{i}$ second moments. From (3.1) and (3.3) we get

$$
\begin{align*}
S_{i-1} & =a_{i}+c_{i} \\
S_{i} & =a_{i}+b_{i} h+\frac{c_{i}}{1+d_{i} h} \\
M_{i-1} & =2 c_{i} d_{i}^{2}  \tag{3.7}\\
M_{i} & =\frac{2 c_{i} d_{i}^{2}}{\left(1+d_{i} h\right)^{3}}
\end{align*}
$$

Consider at first the case $M_{i} \neq 0$. Then also $M_{i-1} \neq 0$ and $d_{i} \neq 0$. From (3.7) it follows immediately that

$$
\begin{aligned}
c_{i} & =\frac{M_{i-1}}{2 d_{i}^{2}} \\
a_{i} & =S_{i-1}-\frac{M_{i-1}}{2 d_{i}^{2}} \\
b_{i} & =\frac{1}{h}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)+\frac{M_{i-1}}{2 d_{i}\left(1+d_{i} h\right)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, by replacing the obtained parameters $a_{i}, b_{i}$, and $c_{i}$ in (3.1) we can represent the quadratic/linear rational spline as

$$
\begin{align*}
S(x)= & S_{i-1}-\frac{M_{i-1}}{2 d_{i}^{2}}+\left(\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}+\frac{M_{i-1}}{2 d_{i}\left(1+d_{i} h\right)}\right)\left(x-x_{i-1}\right) \\
& +\frac{M_{i-1}}{2 d_{i}^{2}\left(1+d_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)\right)}, \quad x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right] . \tag{3.8}
\end{align*}
$$

This also gives for $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$

$$
\begin{gather*}
S^{\prime}(x)=\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}+\frac{M_{i-1}}{2 d_{i}\left(1+d_{i} h\right)}-\frac{M_{i-1}}{2 d_{i}\left(1+d_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2}}  \tag{3.9}\\
S^{\prime \prime}(x)=\frac{M_{i-1}}{\left(1+d_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)\right)^{3}} \tag{3.10}
\end{gather*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)=-\frac{3 d_{i} M_{i-1}}{\left(1+d_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)\right)^{4}} \tag{3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

The continuity of $S$ and $S^{\prime \prime}$ is guaranteed by the representation (3.8). The continuity of $S^{\prime}$, i.e., $S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}-0\right)=S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}+0\right), i=1, \ldots, n-1$, by using (3.9) leads to the equations

$$
\frac{S_{i}-S_{i-1}}{h}+\frac{M_{i-1} h}{2\left(1+d_{i} h\right)^{2}}=\frac{S_{i+1}-S_{i}}{h}-\frac{M_{i} h}{2\left(1+d_{i+1} h\right)} .
$$

From last two equations of (3.7) we get

$$
1+d_{i} h=\left(\frac{M_{i-1}}{M_{i}}\right)^{1 / 3}
$$

and, thus, we have the internal equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{i}^{2 / 3}\left(M_{i-1}^{1 / 3}+M_{i+1}^{1 / 3}\right)=\frac{2}{h^{2}}\left(S_{i-1}-2 S_{i}+S_{i+1}\right), \quad i=1, \ldots, n-1 \tag{3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

These equations hold naturally in the case $M_{i}=0$ (then $M_{i-1}=0$ and $M_{i+1}=0$ ) because then the spline is a linear function and (3.12) expresses the fact that its second order divided difference is equal to zero.

## Chapter 4

## Linear/linear rational spline interpolation

The interpolation problem with linear/linear rational splines is similar to that with quadratic splines. In the latter case the expansions on subintervals via the derivatives of the smooth function $y$ to interpolate could be found, e.g., in [32, 33]. They give the superconvergence of the spline values and its derivatives in certain points. In this chapter we study such a problem in the case of linear/linear rational spline interpolant. First we give the description of the interpolation method, then we analyze the obtained nonlinear system and transform it to a more suitable form in order to get the expansions of the interpolant. Finally, this allows us to receive the superconvergence results.

### 4.1 Description of the method

Let $a=x_{0}<x_{1}<\ldots<x_{n}=b$ be a uniform partition of the interval [ $\left.a, b\right]$ with knots $x_{i}=a+i h, i=0, \ldots, n, h=(b-a) / n, n \in \mathbb{N}$. We also need the points $\xi_{i}=x_{i-1}+h / 2, i=1, \ldots, n$.

In interpolation with linear/linear rational spline $S$, for a given data $\bar{y}_{i}$, $i=1, \ldots, n$, let us require that the interpolation conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
S\left(\xi_{i}\right)=\bar{y}_{i}, \quad i=1, \ldots, n, \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

are satisfied. Since the number of free parameters (see Chapter 2 ) is $n+2$ it is necessary to give two more conditions. So, in addition, we impose

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(a)=\alpha_{1}, \quad S(b)=\alpha_{2} \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime}(a)=\alpha_{1}, \quad S^{\prime}(b)=\alpha_{2} . \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

A combination with one boundary condition from (4.2) and another from (4.3) at different endpoints is also allowed.

In this chapter we use the linear/linear rational spline representation by spline values (see Section 2.3). Replacing the values $\bar{S}_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$, from (4.1) in the internal equations (2.12) and considering them with two boundary conditions we obtain a nonlinear system with respect to the unknowns $S_{0}, \ldots, S_{n}$. The nonlinear system can successfully be solved by the ordinary iteration method, Gauss-Seidel method or Newton's method.

For a smooth function $y$ and interpolating linear/linear rational spline $S$ it is known that $\|S-y\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{3}\right)$ (see, e.g., [37]). It is also known, that a linear/linear rational spline interpolant exists, is unique and preserves the monotonicity of the data only if $y$ is strictly monotone or constant everywhere (see, e.g., [37, 38]).

### 4.2 Transformation of the system

First, we analyze the nonlinear system with respect to the unknowns $S_{0}, \ldots, S_{n}$.
Suppose that we have a function $y:[a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ to interpolate and $\bar{y}_{i}=y\left(\xi_{i}\right)$, $i=1, \ldots, n$. Denote $y_{i}=y\left(x_{i}\right), i=0, \ldots, n$, similar notation will be used in the case of derivatives.

Let us write equations (2.12) with replaced values $\bar{S}_{i}$ from (4.1) in the form

$$
\begin{align*}
\varphi_{i}\left(S_{i-1}, S_{i}, S_{i+1}\right)= & \left(S_{i}-\bar{y}_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-\bar{y}_{i+1}\right)  \tag{4.4}\\
& -\left(\bar{y}_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(\bar{y}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)=0, i=1, \ldots, n-1,
\end{align*}
$$

introducing at the same time functions $\varphi_{i}$. In our further discussion we use the boundary conditions (4.2). We can write the system consisting of the boundary conditions and the internal equations (4.4) in the form

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
h^{2}\left(y_{0}^{\prime}\right)^{2}\left(S_{0}-\alpha_{1}\right)= & 0  \tag{4.5}\\
\varphi_{i}\left(S_{i-1}, S_{i}, S_{i+1}\right)= & \left(S_{i}-\bar{y}_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-\bar{y}_{i+1}\right) \\
& -\left(\bar{y}_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(\bar{y}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)=0, \\
& i=1, \ldots, n-1, \\
h^{2}\left(y_{n}^{\prime}\right)^{2}\left(S_{n}-\alpha_{2}\right)= & 0 .
\end{align*}\right.
$$

Performing the Taylor expansion for (4.4) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\varphi_{i}\left(S_{i-1}, S_{i}, S_{i+1}\right)= & \varphi_{i}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right)+\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right)\left(S_{i-1}-y_{i-1}\right) \\
& +\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right)\left(S_{i}-y_{i}\right)  \tag{4.6}\\
& +\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-y_{i+1}\right)+\frac{\varphi_{i}^{\prime \prime}}{2!}\left(\xi_{\lambda}\right) \bar{h}^{2}=0
\end{align*}
$$

with the difference vector $\bar{h}=\left(S_{i-1}-y_{i-1}, S_{i}-y_{i}, S_{i+1}-y_{i+1}\right)$, some $\lambda \in(0,1)$ and $\xi_{\lambda}=\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right)+\lambda \bar{h}$. Our next aim is to find $\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right)$, $\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right), \frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right)$ and then $\varphi_{i}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right)$. From (4.4) we get the partial derivatives for $i=1, \ldots, n-1$, namely,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}= & -\left(S_{i}-\bar{y}_{i}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-\bar{y}_{i+1}\right)+\left(\bar{y}_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}= & \left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-\bar{y}_{i+1}\right)+\left(S_{i}-\bar{y}_{i}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-\bar{y}_{i+1}\right) \\
& +\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(\bar{y}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)+\left(\bar{y}_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(\bar{y}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}= & \left(S_{i}-\bar{y}_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-\left(\bar{y}_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(\bar{y}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Suppose in the following that $y \in C^{4}[a, b]$. Let us expand $y_{i-1}, \bar{y}_{i}, \bar{y}_{i+1}$ and $y_{i+1}$ at the point $x_{i}$ by Taylor formula up to the forth derivative as

$$
\begin{aligned}
y_{i-1} & =y_{i}-h y_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
\bar{y}_{i} & =y_{i}+\frac{h}{2} y_{i}^{\prime}-\frac{h^{2}}{8} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{48} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{h^{4}}{384} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
\bar{y}_{i+1} & =y_{i}+\frac{h}{2} y_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{8} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{48} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{384} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
y_{i+1} & =y_{i}+h y_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

with the rest terms $O\left(h^{4+\alpha}\right)$ in the case $y^{I V} \in \operatorname{Lip} \alpha, 0<\alpha \leq 1$. Then direct
calculations yield

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right) & =\frac{h^{2}}{4} y_{i}^{\prime 2}+\frac{h^{3}}{4} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right) & =\frac{3}{2} h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime 2}+O\left(h^{4}\right)  \tag{4.7}\\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right) & =\frac{h^{2}}{4} y_{i}^{\prime 2}-\frac{h^{3}}{4} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Similarly, from

$$
\begin{aligned}
\varphi_{i}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right)= & \left(y_{i}-\bar{y}_{i}\right)\left(y_{i}-y_{i-1}\right)\left(y_{i+1}-\bar{y}_{i+1}\right) \\
& -\left(\bar{y}_{i+1}-y_{i}\right)\left(y_{i+1}-y_{i}\right)\left(\bar{y}_{i}-y_{i-1}\right)=0, \quad i=1, \ldots, n-1
\end{aligned}
$$

we get with the help of Taylor formula as shown above

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi_{i}\left(y_{i-1}, y_{i}, y_{i+1}\right)=\frac{h^{6}}{64}\left(\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2} y_{i}^{I V}-4 y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+3\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}\right)+o\left(h^{6}\right) \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

The entries in the matrix $\varphi_{i}^{\prime \prime}$ are consisting of the second order partial derivatives of $\varphi_{i}$ as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}^{2}}=0 \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1} \partial S_{i}}=\frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i} \partial S_{i-1}}=-\left(S_{i+1}-\bar{y}_{i+1}\right)-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right) \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1} \partial S_{i+1}}=\frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1} \partial S_{i-1}}=-\left(S_{i}-\bar{y}_{i}\right)+\left(\bar{y}_{i+1}-S_{i}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}^{2}}=2\left(S_{i+1}-\bar{y}_{i+1}\right)-2\left(\bar{y}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i} \partial S_{i+1}}=\frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1} \partial S_{i}}=\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)+\left(S_{i}-\bar{y}_{i}\right)+\left(\bar{y}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}^{2}}=0
\end{aligned}
$$

They are of order $O(h)$. Recall that $\|S-y\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{3}\right)$. This means $\|\bar{h}\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{3}\right)$ and altogether $\varphi_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{\lambda}\right) \bar{h}^{2}=O\left(h^{7}\right)$. Taking now into account (4.7), (4.8) and the
order of the rest term in (4.6), system (4.5) reduces to

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
h^{2}\left(y_{0}^{\prime}\right)^{2}\left(S_{0}-\alpha_{1}\right)=0, \\
\frac{h^{6}}{64}\left(\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2} y_{i}^{I V}-4 y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+3\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}\right)  \tag{4.9}\\
\quad+\left(\frac{h^{2}}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+\frac{h^{3}}{4} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right)\left(S_{i-1}-y_{i-1}\right) \\
\quad+\left(\frac{3}{2} h^{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right)\left(S_{i}-y_{i}\right) \\
\quad+\left(\frac{h^{2}}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{h^{3}}{4} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right)\left(S_{i+1}-y_{i+1}\right)+o\left(h^{6}\right)=0, \\
\quad i=1, \ldots, n-1, \\
h^{2}\left(y_{n}^{\prime}\right)^{2}\left(S_{n}-\alpha_{2}\right)=0 .
\end{array}\right.
$$

We assume that $y^{\prime}(x)>0$ for all $x \in[a, b]$ or $y^{\prime}(x)<0$ for all $x \in[a, b]$ which means that $y$ is strictly monotone (recall that a linear/linear rational spline interpolant exists only if $y$ is strictly monotone or constant everywhere). Consider now (4.9) as a linear system with respect to the unknowns $S_{i}-y_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n$. Then its matrix has the diagonal dominance in rows for sufficiently small $h$. We look for the solution such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{i}=y_{i}+h^{4}[\psi(y)]_{i}+\beta_{i}, \quad i=0, \ldots, n, \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the continuous function $\psi(y)$ and numbers $\beta_{i}$ will be specified later. Note, that the continuity of $\psi(y)$ gives $[\psi(y)]_{i-1}=[\psi(y)]_{i}+o(1),[\psi(y)]_{i+1}=[\psi(y)]_{i}+o(1)$. Let us look more precisely the internal equations of (4.9). Replacing there $S_{i}-y_{i}$, $i=0, \ldots, n$, with (4.10) we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{h^{6}}{64}\left(\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2} y_{i}^{I V}-4 y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+3\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}\right) \\
& \quad+\left(\frac{h^{2}}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+\frac{h^{3}}{4} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right)\left(h^{4}[\psi(y)]_{i}+\beta_{i-1}\right) \\
& \quad+\left(\frac{3}{2} h^{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right)\left(h^{4}[\psi(y)]_{i}+\beta_{i}\right) \\
& \quad+\left(\frac{h^{2}}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{h^{3}}{4} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right)\left(h^{4}[\psi(y)]_{i}+\beta_{i+1}\right)+o\left(h^{6}\right)=0
\end{aligned}
$$

Determine now the function $\psi(y)$ so that the coefficient at $h^{6}$ is equal to 0 , i.e.,

$$
\frac{1}{64}\left(\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2} y_{i}^{I V}-4 y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+3\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}\right)+2\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}[\psi(y)]_{i}=0
$$

and it gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
[\psi(y)]_{i}=-\frac{1}{128}\left(y_{i}^{I V}-4 \frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime}}+3 \frac{\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}}{\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}}\right), \quad i=1, \ldots, n-1 \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Extend (4.11) for $i=0$ and $i=n$ as well, then choose $\beta_{0}=o\left(h^{4}\right)$ and $\beta_{n}=o\left(h^{4}\right)$ (e.g., it may be $\beta_{0}=\beta_{n}=0$ ). This determines the values of $\alpha_{1}$ and $\alpha_{2}$. Thus, we pose the boundary conditions (4.2) in the form

$$
\begin{align*}
& S(a)=y(a)-\frac{h^{4}}{128}\left(y^{I V}(a)-4 \frac{y^{\prime \prime}(a) y^{\prime \prime \prime}(a)}{y^{\prime}(a)}+3 \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime}(a)\right)^{3}}{\left(y^{\prime}(a)\right)^{2}}\right)+o\left(h^{4}\right)  \tag{4.12}\\
& S(b)=y(b)-\frac{h^{4}}{128}\left(y^{I V}(b)-4 \frac{y^{\prime \prime}(b) y^{\prime \prime \prime}(b)}{y^{\prime}(b)}+3 \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime}(b)\right)^{3}}{\left(y^{\prime}(b)\right)^{2}}\right)+o\left(h^{4}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore, we may write the system (4.9) as follows

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
h^{2}\left(y_{0}^{\prime}\right)^{2} \beta_{0}=o\left(h^{6}\right) \\
\left(\frac{h^{2}}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+\frac{h^{3}}{4} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right) \beta_{i-1} \\
\quad+\left(\frac{3}{2} h^{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right) \beta_{i} \\
\quad+\left(\frac{h^{2}}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{h^{3}}{4} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right) \beta_{i+1}+o\left(h^{6}\right)=0, \quad i=1, \ldots, n-1, \\
h^{2}\left(y_{n}^{\prime}\right)^{2} \beta_{n}=o\left(h^{6}\right)
\end{array}\right.
$$

This system has the matrix form $A \beta=g(\beta)$, where $\beta=\left(\beta_{0}, \ldots, \beta_{n}\right)$. The matrix $A$ has a diagonal dominance in rows and the components of $g$ are depending continuously on $\beta$. The equivalent system $\beta=A^{-1} g(\beta)$ has a solution by BohlBrouwer fixed point principle because $A^{-1} g$ maps a set $K=\left[-c h^{4}, c h^{4}\right]^{n+1}$ for some $c>0$ into itself due to the fact that, for $\beta=O\left(h^{4}\right)$, we have $g(\beta)=o\left(h^{6}\right)$. Recall that the solution of the interpolation problem is unique and, consequently, $\beta$ is uniquely determined. Thus, it holds $\beta_{i}=o\left(h^{4}\right), i=0, \ldots, n$, and in total, (4.10) is now

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{i}=y_{i}-\frac{h^{4}}{128}\left(y_{i}^{I V}-4 \frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime}}+3 \frac{\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}}{\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}}\right)+o\left(h^{4}\right), \quad i=0, \ldots, n \tag{4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

It could be also transformed into the form

$$
S_{i}=y_{i}-\frac{h^{4}}{128}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\left(\frac{y^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y^{\prime}}\right)_{i}^{\prime}-3 y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(\frac{y^{\prime \prime}}{y^{\prime}}\right)_{i}^{\prime}\right)+o\left(h^{4}\right), \quad i=0, \ldots, n .
$$

### 4.3 Expansions of the interpolant

In this section we establish the expansions of interpolant $S$ and its first and second derivatives on the whole particular interval.

We write the representation (2.9) with obvious notations $A$ and $B$ in the following form

$$
S(x)=\bar{S}_{i}+\frac{A}{B}=y(x)+\frac{A-\left(y(x)-\bar{S}_{i}\right) B}{B}
$$

In the fractional term $\frac{A-\left(y(x)-\bar{S}_{i}\right) B}{B}$ we use $\bar{S}_{i}=\bar{y}_{i}$ and Taylor expansions at $\xi_{i}$, i.e.,

$$
\begin{aligned}
S_{i} & =y_{i}-\frac{h^{4}}{128} \psi_{i}+o\left(h^{4}\right) \\
& =\bar{y}_{i}+\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime} \frac{h}{2}+\frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}}{2}\left(\frac{h}{2}\right)^{2}+\frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{6}\left(\frac{h}{2}\right)^{3}+\frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{I V}}{24}\left(\frac{h}{2}\right)^{4}-\frac{h^{4}}{128} \bar{\psi}_{i}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
S_{i-1} & =y_{i-1}-\frac{h^{4}}{128} \psi_{i-1}+o\left(h^{4}\right) \\
& =\bar{y}_{i}-\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime} \frac{h}{2}+\frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}}{2}\left(\frac{h}{2}\right)^{2}-\frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{6}\left(\frac{h}{2}\right)^{3}+\frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{I V}}{24}\left(\frac{h}{2}\right)^{4}-\frac{h^{4}}{128} \bar{\psi}_{i}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
y(x) & =\bar{y}_{i}+\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime} t h+\frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}}{2}(t h)^{2}+\frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{6}(t h)^{3}+\frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{I V}}{24}(t h)^{4}+o\left(h^{4}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

This gives us for $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$

$$
\begin{align*}
S(x)= & y(x)+\frac{t\left(1-4 t^{2}\right)}{48} h^{3}\left(2 \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-3 \frac{\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}}\right) \\
& +\frac{t^{2}}{48} h^{4}\left(-\left(1+2 t^{2}\right) \bar{y}_{i}^{I V}+6 \frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}}-6\left(1-t^{2}\right) \frac{\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}}{\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}}\right)+o\left(h^{4}\right) \tag{4.14}
\end{align*}
$$

with $x=\xi_{i}+t h, t \in[-1 / 2,1 / 2]$. Clearly, the expansion (4.14) at $x=x_{i}$ or $t=1 / 2$ coincides with (4.13).

For the first derivative, proceeding similarly, i.e., using the form $S^{\prime}(x)=y^{\prime}(x)+\frac{A}{B}$ and same Taylor expansions at $\xi_{i}$ we get from (2.10)

$$
\begin{align*}
S^{\prime}(x)= & y^{\prime}(x)+\frac{1-12 t^{2}}{48} h^{2}\left(2 \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-3 \frac{\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}}\right) \\
& -\frac{t}{24} h^{3}\left(\left(1+4 t^{2}\right) \bar{y}_{i}^{I V}-6 \frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}}+6\left(1-2 t^{2}\right) \frac{\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}}{\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}}\right)+o\left(h^{3}\right) \tag{4.15}
\end{align*}
$$

For the second derivative we obtain from (2.11)

$$
\begin{align*}
S^{\prime \prime}(x)= & y^{\prime \prime}(x)+\operatorname{th}\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{3}{2} \frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime 2}}{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}}\right) \\
& +\frac{h^{2}}{24}\left(-\left(1+12 t^{2}\right) \bar{y}_{i}^{I V}+6 \frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}}-6\left(1-6 t^{2}\right) \frac{\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}}{\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}}\right)+o\left(h^{2}\right), \tag{4.16}
\end{align*}
$$

where, as before, $x=\xi_{i}+t h, t \in[-1 / 2,1 / 2]$.
Same technique allows to establish the expansions (4.13)-(4.16) in the case of boundary conditions (4.3) as

$$
\begin{align*}
& S^{\prime}(a)=y^{\prime}(a)-\frac{h^{2}}{12}\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(a)-\frac{3}{2} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime}(a)\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime}(a)}\right)+o\left(h^{3}\right),  \tag{4.17}\\
& S^{\prime}(b)=y^{\prime}(b)-\frac{h^{2}}{12}\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(b)-\frac{3}{2} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime}(b)\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime}(b)}\right)+o\left(h^{3}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

We have proved the following
Theorem 4.1. Let $y$ be a strictly monotone function and $y \in C^{4}[a, b]$. Then the linear/linear rational spline $S$ of smoothness class $C^{1}$ satisfying interpolation conditions (4.1) and boundary conditions (4.12) or (4.17) expands like (4.13)-(4.16).
Remark 4.1. If $y^{I V} \in \operatorname{Lip} \alpha, 0<\alpha \leq 1$, then in previous formulae all the rest terms written as o $\left(h^{k}\right)$ for some $k$ could be replaced by $O\left(h^{k+\alpha}\right)$.

### 4.4 Superconvergence rates

We derive our superconvergence rate results basing on the expansions of the interpolant (4.14)-(4.16) from the previous section.

It is clear that from (4.14) we get $S\left(x_{i}\right)=y\left(x_{i}\right)+O\left(h^{4}\right), i=0, \ldots, n$. Expansion (4.15) yields $S^{\prime}(x)=y^{\prime}(x)+O\left(h^{3}\right)$ in points $x=\xi_{i}+t h$, corresponding to $t= \pm \sqrt{3} / 6$, and lastly (4.16) gives $S^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)=y^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)+O\left(h^{2}\right), i=1, \ldots, n$.

The numerical experiments presented in Chapter 8 confirm the convergence rates predicted by the theory.

Similar results for quadratic splines were known earlier. They are given, e.g., in [32] in a slightly different form

$$
\begin{aligned}
S(x)= & y(x)-\frac{t(1-t)(1-2 t)}{12} h^{3} y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x) \\
& -\frac{(1-2 t)^{2}\left(1+4 t-4 t^{2}\right)}{128} h^{4} y^{I V}(x)+o\left(h^{4}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& S^{\prime}(x)=y^{\prime}(x)-\frac{1-6 t-6 t^{2}}{12} h^{2} y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)-\frac{t(1-t)(1-2 t)}{6} h^{3} y^{I V}(x)+o\left(h^{3}\right) \\
& S^{\prime \prime}(x)=y^{\prime \prime}(x)+\frac{1-2 t}{2} h y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)-\frac{1-6 t-6 t^{2}}{6} h^{2} y^{I V}(x)+o\left(h^{2}\right) \\
& \quad x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right], \quad x=x_{i-1}+t h, \quad t \in[0,1] .
\end{aligned}
$$

We see that the superconvergence takes place in points $x_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n$, for quadratic spline interpolant $S$, in $x=\xi_{i} \pm(\sqrt{3} / 6) h, i=1, \ldots, n$, for $S^{\prime}$ and in $\xi_{i}$, $i=1, \ldots, n$, for $S^{\prime \prime}$, that means in the same points as for linear/linear rational spline interpolants.

## Chapter 5

## Quadratic/linear rational spline interpolation

The interpolation problem with quadratic/linear rational splines is similar to that with cubic splines, to which the expansions on subintervals via the derivatives of the smooth function to interpolate could be found, e.g., in [58]. We will study such a problem in the case of quadratic/linear rational spline interpolation. This needs expansions of a quadratic/linear rational spline interpolant with special boundary conditions and the establishment of them is the main purpose of this chapter. At first we give the description of the quadratic/linear rational spline interpolation method. Then we analyze the obtained nonlinear system and transform it to a more suitable form. In the end of this chapter we get the expansions of the interpolant and receive the superconvergence results.

### 5.1 Description of the method

Consider a uniform partition of the interval $[a, b]$ with knots $x_{i}=a+i h$, $i=0, \ldots, n, h=(b-a) / n, n \in \mathbb{N}$. In this chapter we use the spline representation by spline values and second moments (Section 3.2).

Assume that there is given data $y_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n$. In interpolation with quadratic/linear rational splines we look for a spline $S \in C^{2}[a, b]$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
S\left(x_{i}\right)=y_{i}, \quad i=0, \ldots, n \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

In addition, we set two boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime}(a)=\alpha_{1}, \quad S^{\prime}(b)=\alpha_{2} \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime \prime}(a)=\alpha_{1}, \quad S^{\prime \prime}(b)=\alpha_{2} \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

for given $\alpha_{1}$ and $\alpha_{2}$, which we will specify later. After replacing the values $S_{i}$, $i=0, \ldots, n$, from (5.1) in the internal equations (3.12) and considering them with two boundary conditions we obtain a nonlinear system with respect to the unknowns $M_{0}, \ldots, M_{n}$.

For a strictly convex (or strictly concave) smooth function $y$ and interpolating quadratic/linear rational spline $S$ it is known that $\|S-y\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{4}\right)$, see, e.g., [36, 37]. In [46] it is proven, that a quadratic/linear rational spline interpolant of class $C^{2}$ exists and is unique and strictly convex for any strictly convex data.

### 5.2 Transformation of the system and second moments of the interpolant

In this section we study the nonlinear system with respect to the unknowns $M_{0}, \ldots, M_{n}$.

Suppose that we have a sufficiently smooth function $y:[a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ to interpolate. Denote $y_{i}=y\left(x_{i}\right), i=0, \ldots, n$, similar notation will be used in the case of derivatives.

Firstly we write the equations (3.12) with replaced values $S_{i}$ from (5.1) in the following form

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\varphi_{i}\left(M_{i-1}, M_{i}, M_{i+1}\right)=M_{i}^{2 / 3}\left(M_{i-1}^{1 / 3}+M_{i+1}^{1 / 3}\right)-\frac{2}{h^{2}}\left(y_{i-1}-2 y_{i}+y_{i+1}\right)=0 \\
i=1, \ldots, n-1 \tag{5.4}
\end{array}
$$

introducing at the same time functions $\varphi_{i}$. Now we consider the boundary conditions (5.3) and internal equations (5.4) in the form

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
M_{0}-\alpha_{1}=0 \\
\varphi_{i}\left(M_{i-1}, M_{i}, M_{i+1}\right)=M_{i}^{2 / 3}\left(M_{i-1}^{1 / 3}+M_{i+1}^{1 / 3}\right)-\frac{2}{h^{2}}\left(y_{i-1}-2 y_{i}+y_{i+1}\right)=0 \\
\\
\quad i=1, \ldots, n-1 \\
M_{n}-\alpha_{2}=0
\end{array}\right.
$$

This system can be transformed with the help of Taylor expansion at (5.4) into

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
M_{0}-\alpha_{1}=0 \\
\varphi_{i}\left(y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right)+\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i-1}}\left(y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right)\left(M_{i-1}-y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}\right)  \tag{5.5}\\
\quad+\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i}}\left(y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right)\left(M_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right) \\
\quad+\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i+1}}\left(y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right)\left(M_{i+1}-y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right)+\frac{\varphi_{i}^{\prime \prime}}{2!}\left(\xi_{\lambda}\right) \bar{h}^{2}=0 \\
i=1, \ldots, n-1
\end{array}\right.
$$

with the difference vector $\bar{h}=\left(M_{i-1}-y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}, M_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime \prime}, M_{i+1}-y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right)$, some number $\lambda \in(0,1)$ and $\xi_{\lambda}=\left(y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right)+\lambda \bar{h}$. Now let us investigate $\varphi_{i}\left(y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right)$ and the partial derivatives as well as the rest term in (5.5). We calculate from (5.4) for $i=1, \ldots, n-1$

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i-1}}\left(M_{i-1}, M_{i}, M_{i+1}\right) & =\frac{1}{3}\left(\frac{M_{i}}{M_{i-1}}\right)^{2 / 3} \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i}}\left(M_{i-1}, M_{i}, M_{i+1}\right) & =\frac{2}{3}\left(\left(\frac{M_{i-1}}{M_{i}}\right)^{1 / 3}+\left(\frac{M_{i+1}}{M_{i}}\right)^{1 / 3}\right)  \tag{5.6}\\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i+1}}\left(M_{i-1}, M_{i}, M_{i+1}\right) & =\frac{1}{3}\left(\frac{M_{i}}{M_{i+1}}\right)^{2 / 3}
\end{align*}
$$

Suppose in the following that $y \in C^{4}[a, b]$. We assume that $y^{\prime \prime}(x)>0$ for all $x \in[a, b]$ or $y^{\prime \prime}(x)<0$ for all $x \in[a, b]$ which means that $y$ or $-y$ is strictly convex. Let us expand $y_{i-1}, y_{i+1}, y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}$ and $y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}$ at the point $x_{i}$ by Taylor formula up to the forth derivative as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& y_{i-1}=y_{i}-h y_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right) \\
& y_{i+1}=y_{i}+h y_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right) \\
& y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}=y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-h y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{2}\right) \\
& y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}=y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+h y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{2}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

First two expansions give for $\varphi_{i}\left(y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right)$

$$
\frac{2}{h^{2}}\left(y_{i-1}-2 y_{i}+y_{i+1}\right)=2 y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{1}{6} h^{2} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{2}\right)
$$

Next, $y_{i}^{\prime \prime}$ together with $y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}$ gives

$$
\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}{y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}}=1+h \frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}-\frac{h^{2}}{2} \frac{y_{i}^{I V}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}+h^{2} \frac{\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}}+o\left(h^{2}\right)
$$

and $y_{i}^{\prime \prime}$ with $y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}$

$$
\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}{y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}}=1-h \frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}-\frac{h^{2}}{2} \frac{y_{i}^{I V}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}+h^{2} \frac{\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}}+o\left(h^{2}\right)
$$

Then by (5.6) with the help of expansions $(1+x)^{2 / 3}=1+\frac{2}{3} x-\frac{1}{9} x^{2}+o\left(x^{2}\right)$ and $(1+x)^{-1 / 3}=1-\frac{1}{3} x+\frac{2}{9} x^{2}+o\left(x^{2}\right)$ direct calculations yield

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i-1}}\left(y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right) & =\frac{1}{3}+\frac{2}{9} h \frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}-\frac{1}{9} h^{2} \frac{y_{i}^{I V}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}+\frac{5}{27} h^{2}\left(\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right)^{2}+o\left(h^{2}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i}}\left(y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right) & =\frac{4}{3}+\frac{2}{9} h^{2} \frac{y_{i}^{I V}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}-\frac{4}{27} h^{2}\left(\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right)^{2}+o\left(h^{2}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i+1}}\left(y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right) & =\frac{1}{3}-\frac{2}{9} h \frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}-\frac{1}{9} h^{2} \frac{y_{i}^{I V}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}+\frac{5}{27} h^{2}\left(\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right)^{2}+o\left(h^{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

From (5.4) we get

$$
\varphi_{i}\left(y_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i}^{\prime \prime}, y_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}\right)=\frac{1}{6} h^{2} y_{i}^{I V}-\frac{2}{9} h^{2} \frac{\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}+o\left(h^{2}\right)
$$

which we replace in (5.5).
We look for the solution of the obtained system such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{i}=y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+h^{2}[\psi(y)]_{i}+\beta_{i}, \quad i=0, \ldots, n \tag{5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we suppose the function $\psi(y)$ to be continuous. Then $[\psi(y)]_{i-1}=[\psi(y)]_{i}+o(1)$ and $[\psi(y)]_{i+1}=[\psi(y)]_{i}+o(1)$.

The entries in the matrix $\varphi_{i}^{\prime \prime}$ as second order partial derivatives of $\varphi_{i}$ could be calculated from (5.6):

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i-1}^{2}}=-\frac{2}{9}\left(\frac{M_{i}}{M_{i-1}}\right)^{2 / 3} \frac{1}{M_{i-1}} \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i-1} \partial M_{i}}=\frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i} \partial M_{i-1}}=\frac{2}{9}\left(\frac{M_{i}}{M_{i-1}}\right)^{2 / 3} \frac{1}{M_{i}}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i-1} \partial M_{i+1}}=\frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i+1} \partial M_{i-1}}=0 \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i}^{2}}=-\frac{2}{9}\left(\left(\frac{M_{i-1}}{M_{i}}\right)^{1 / 3}+\left(\frac{M_{i+1}}{M_{i}}\right)^{1 / 3}\right) \frac{1}{M_{i}} \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i} \partial M_{i+1}}=\frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i+1} \partial M_{i}}=\frac{2}{9}\left(\frac{M_{i+1}}{M_{i}}\right)^{1 / 3} \frac{1}{M_{i+1}} \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial M_{i+1}^{2}}=-\frac{2}{9}\left(\frac{M_{i}}{M_{i+1}}\right)^{2 / 3} \frac{1}{M_{i+1}}
\end{aligned}
$$

We see, that they contain a multiplier $M_{j}^{-1}, j=i-1, i, i+1$, of the expressions in (5.6) and are of order $O(1)$ provided we suppose, e.g., that $\beta_{i}=O(h)$. Then, in the case $\beta_{i}=O\left(h^{2}\right)$, due to the three-diagonality of the matrix $\varphi_{i}^{\prime \prime}$, we have $\varphi_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{\lambda}\right) \bar{h}^{2}=O\left(h^{4}\right)$ and the system (5.5) could be written as

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+h^{2}[\psi(y)]_{0}+\beta_{0}-\alpha_{1}=0  \tag{5.8}\\
\frac{1}{6} h^{2} y_{i}^{I V}-\frac{2}{9} h^{2} \frac{\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}} \\
+\left(\frac{1}{3}+\frac{2}{9} h \frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}-\frac{1}{9} h^{2} \frac{y_{i}^{I V}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}+\frac{5}{27} h^{2}\left(\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right)^{2}\right)\left(h^{2}[\psi(y)]_{i}+\beta_{i-1}\right) \\
+\left(\frac{4}{3}+\frac{2}{9} h^{2} \frac{y_{i}^{I V}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}-\frac{4}{27} h^{2}\left(\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right)^{2}\right)\left(h^{2}[\psi(y)]_{i}+\beta_{i}\right) \\
+\left(\frac{1}{3}-\frac{2}{9} h \frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}-\frac{1}{9} h^{2} \frac{y_{i}^{I V}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}+\frac{5}{27} h^{2}\left(\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right)^{2}\right)\left(h^{2}[\psi(y)]_{i}+\beta_{i+1}\right)+o\left(h^{2}\right)=0 \\
y_{n}^{\prime \prime}+h^{2}[\psi(y)]_{n}+\beta_{n}-\alpha_{2}=0
\end{array}\right.
$$

Determine the function $\psi(y)$ so that the coefficient at $h^{2}$ in interior equations is equal to 0 . This gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi(y)=-\frac{1}{12}\left(y^{I V}-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime \prime}}\right) \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us choose $\alpha_{1}$ and $\alpha_{2}$ so that $\beta_{0}=o\left(h^{2}\right)$ and $\beta_{n}=o\left(h^{2}\right)$ (e.g., it may be
$\beta_{0}=\beta_{n}=0$ ), thus, we pose the boundary conditions (5.3) in the form

$$
\begin{align*}
& S^{\prime \prime}(a)=y^{\prime \prime}(a)-\frac{h^{2}}{12}\left(y^{I V}(a)-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(a)\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime \prime}(a)}\right)+o\left(h^{2}\right)  \tag{5.10}\\
& S^{\prime \prime}(b)=y^{\prime \prime}(b)-\frac{h^{2}}{12}\left(y^{I V}(b)-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(b)\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime \prime}(b)}\right)+o\left(h^{2}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Finally, we get from (5.8) a system of the form $A \beta=\Phi(\beta)$ with respect to the unknowns $\beta=\left(\beta_{0}, \ldots, \beta_{n}\right)$ having the matrix $A$ with diagonal dominance in rows and the components of $\Phi$ depending continuously on $\beta$. The equivalent system $\beta=A^{-1} \Phi(\beta)$ has a solution by Bohl-Brouwer fixed point principle because $A^{-1} \Phi$ maps a set $K=\left[-c h^{2}, c h^{2}\right]^{n+1}$ for some $c>0$ into itself due to the fact that, for $\beta=O\left(h^{2}\right)$, we have $\Phi(\beta)=o\left(h^{2}\right)$. Recall that the solution of the interpolation problem is unique and, consequently, $\beta$ is uniquely determined. Thus, it holds $\beta_{i}=o\left(h^{2}\right), i=0, \ldots, n$, and we arrive at the estimate

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{i}=y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{2}}{12}\left(y_{i}^{I V}-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right)+o\left(h^{2}\right), \quad i=0, \ldots, n \tag{5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that in the case $y^{I V} \in \operatorname{Lip} \alpha, 0<\alpha \leq 1$, we have the error terms $O\left(h^{2+\alpha}\right)$ instead of $o\left(h^{2}\right)$ in all earlier expansions and estimates.

### 5.3 Expansions of the interpolant

In this section the expansions of interpolants on the whole particular interval will be established.

Setting $x=x_{i-1}+t h, t \in[0,1]$ and replacing $S_{i-1}$ and $S_{i}$ in (3.8), (3.9), (3.10) as well as (3.11) by $y_{i-1}$ and $y_{i}$, respectively, we write them in the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
S(x)=y_{i-1}-\frac{t(1-t) h^{2} M_{i-1}}{2\left(1+d_{i} h\right)\left(1+d_{i} t h\right)}  \tag{5.12}\\
S^{\prime}(x)=\frac{y_{i}-y_{i-1}}{h}+\frac{\left(t-1+t\left(1+d_{i} t h\right)\right) h M_{i-1}}{2\left(1+d_{i} h\right)\left(1+d_{i} t h\right)^{2}}  \tag{5.13}\\
S^{\prime \prime}(x)=\frac{M_{i-1}}{\left(1+d_{i} t h\right)^{3}} \tag{5.14}
\end{gather*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime \prime}(x)=\frac{-3 M_{i-1} d_{i}}{\left(1+d_{i} t h\right)^{4}} \tag{5.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using $1+d_{i} h=\left(M_{i-1} / M_{i}\right)^{1 / 3}$ and (5.11) we establish with the help of Taylor formula the expansion

$$
1+d_{i} t h=1+t\left(-\frac{h}{3} \frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}+h^{2}\left(\frac{1}{6} \frac{y_{i}^{I V}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}-\frac{1}{9}\left(\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right)^{2}\right)\right)+o\left(h^{2}\right)
$$

Similarly we can express $\left(1+d_{i} t h\right)^{2},\left(1+d_{i} t h\right)^{3},\left(1+d_{i} t h\right)^{4}$ and $d_{i}$ needed in (5.12), (5.13), (5.14), (5.15). Finally, by direct calculations, the Taylor expansion in $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
& S(x)=y(x)-\frac{t^{2}(1-t)^{2}}{24} h^{4}\left(y^{I V}(x)-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime \prime}(x)}\right)+o\left(h^{4}\right),  \tag{5.16}\\
& S^{\prime}(x)=y^{\prime}(x)-\frac{t(1-t)(1-2 t)}{12} h^{3}\left(y^{I V}(x)-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime \prime}(x)}\right)+o\left(h^{3}\right),  \tag{5.17}\\
& S^{\prime \prime}(x)=y^{\prime \prime}(x)-\frac{1-6 t(1-t)}{12} h^{2}\left(y^{I V}(x)-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime \prime}(x)}\right)+o\left(h^{2}\right),  \tag{5.18}\\
& S^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)=y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)+\frac{1-2 t}{2} h\left(y^{I V}(x)-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime \prime}(x)}\right)+o(h) . \tag{5.19}
\end{align*}
$$

Note that (5.18) at $x=x_{i}$ coincides with (5.11).
The boundary conditions (5.2) have to be used in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime}(a)=y^{\prime}(a)+o\left(h^{3}\right), \quad S^{\prime}(b)=y^{\prime}(b)+o\left(h^{3}\right) \tag{5.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Recall that we assumed $y \in C^{4}[a, b]$. Suppose now that $y \in C^{5}[a, b]$. The reasoning of Section 5.2 gives then (5.11) with the rest term $o\left(h^{3}\right)$ instead of $o\left(h^{2}\right)$. Doing once more the calculations, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
1+d_{i} t h=1+t\left(-\frac{h}{3} \frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right. & +h^{2}\left(\frac{1}{6} \frac{y_{i}^{I V}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}-\frac{1}{9}\left(\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right)^{2}\right) \\
& \left.+h^{3}\left(-\frac{1}{36} \frac{y_{i}^{V}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}+\frac{1}{108} \frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime} y_{i}^{I V}}{\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}}+\frac{1}{81}\left(\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right)^{3}\right)\right)+o\left(h^{3}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and then for $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$ we get the expansions

$$
\begin{align*}
& S(x)=y(x)-\frac{t^{2}(1-t)^{2}}{24} h^{4}\left(y^{I V}(x)-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime \prime}(x)}\right)  \tag{5.21}\\
& -\frac{t(1-t)(1-2 t)(1+3 t(1-t))}{180} h^{5}\left(y^{V}(x)-\frac{10}{3} \frac{y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x) y^{I V}(x)}{y^{\prime \prime}(x)}+\frac{20}{9} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)\right)^{3}}{\left(y^{\prime \prime}(x)\right)^{2}}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

$$
+o\left(h^{5}\right),
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
S^{\prime}(x)= & y^{\prime}(x)-\frac{t(1-t)(1-2 t)}{12} h^{3}\left(y^{I V}(x)-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime \prime}(x)}\right) \\
& -\frac{2-45 t^{2}(1-t)^{2}}{360} h^{4} y^{V}(x)+\frac{1-24 t^{2}(1-t)^{2}}{54} h^{4} \frac{y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x) y^{I V}(x)}{y^{\prime \prime}(x)}  \tag{5.22}\\
& -\frac{2-51 t^{2}(1-t)^{2}}{162} h^{4} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)\right)^{3}}{\left(y^{\prime \prime}(x)\right)^{2}}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
S^{\prime \prime}(x)= & y^{\prime \prime}(x)-\frac{1-6 t(1-t)}{12} h^{2}\left(y^{I V}(x)-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime \prime}(x)}\right)  \tag{5.23}\\
& +\frac{t(1-t)(1-2 t)}{6} h^{3}\left(y^{V}(x)-4 \frac{y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x) y^{I V}(x)}{y^{\prime \prime}(x)}+\frac{28}{9} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)\right)^{3}}{\left(y^{\prime \prime}(x)\right)^{2}}\right)+o\left(h^{3}\right), \\
S^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(x)= & y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)+\frac{1-2 t}{2} h\left(y^{I V}(x)-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime \prime}(x)}\right)  \tag{5.24}\\
& +\frac{1-6 t(1-t)}{12} h^{2}\left(y^{V}(x)-\frac{16}{3} \frac{y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x) y^{I V}(x)}{y^{\prime \prime}(x)}+\frac{44}{9} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)\right)^{3}}{\left(y^{\prime \prime}(x)\right)^{2}}\right)+o\left(h^{2}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

The boundary conditions (5.2) have to be specified now as

$$
\begin{align*}
& S^{\prime}(a)=y^{\prime}(a)-h^{4}\left(\frac{1}{180} y^{V}(a)-\frac{1}{54} \frac{y^{\prime \prime \prime}(a) y^{I V}(a)}{y^{\prime \prime}(a)}+\frac{1}{81} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(a)\right)^{3}}{\left(y^{\prime \prime}(a)\right)^{2}}\right)+o\left(h^{4}\right) \\
& S^{\prime}(b)=y^{\prime}(b)-h^{4}\left(\frac{1}{180} y^{V}(b)-\frac{1}{54} \frac{y^{\prime \prime \prime}(b) y^{I V}(b)}{y^{\prime \prime}(b)}+\frac{1}{81} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}(b)\right)^{3}}{\left(y^{\prime \prime}(b)\right)^{2}}\right)+o\left(h^{4}\right) . \tag{5.25}
\end{align*}
$$

We have proved the following
Theorem 5.1. Let $y(o r-y)$ be a strictly convex function. In the case $y \in C^{4}[a, b]$ the quadratic/linear rational spline $S$ of smoothness class $C^{2}$ satisfying interpolation conditions (5.1) and boundary conditions (5.10) or (5.20) expands as shown in (5.16)-(5.19). If $y \in C^{5}[a, b]$ the expansions (5.21)-(5.24) hold provided the boundary conditions (5.10) with the rest terms o( $h^{3}$ ) instead of o $\left(h^{2}\right)$ or (5.25) are used.

Remark 5.1. If $y^{I V} \in \operatorname{Lip} \alpha$ or $y^{V} \in \operatorname{Lip} \alpha, 0<\alpha \leq 1$, then in previous formulae all the rest terms written as $o\left(h^{k}\right)$ for some $k$ could be replaced by $O\left(h^{k+\alpha}\right)$.

### 5.4 Superconvergence rates

Basing on expansions (5.17) - (5.19) it is now immediate to obtain superconvergence assertions.

From (5.17) we get $S^{\prime}(x)=y^{\prime}(x)+O\left(h^{4}\right)$ in points $x=x_{i}$ and $x=\left(x_{i-1}+x_{i}\right) / 2$, (5.18) yields $S^{\prime \prime}(x)=y^{\prime \prime}(x)+O\left(h^{3}\right)$ in points $x=x_{i}+t h$, corresponding to $t=(3 \pm \sqrt{3}) / 6$ and (5.19) gives $S^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)=y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)+O\left(h^{2}\right)$ in points $\left(x_{i-1}+x_{i}\right) / 2$.

In Chapter 8 there are numerical experiments which confirm the theoretical convergence rates.

The expansions for cubic spline interpolants, which were known earlier could be found, e.g., in [58]. In the case $y \in C^{5}[a, b]$, for $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& S(x)= y(x)-\frac{t^{2}(1-t)^{2}}{24} h^{4} y^{I V}(x) \\
&-\frac{t(1-t)(1-2 t)(1+3 t(1-t))}{180} h^{5} y^{V}(x)+o\left(h^{5}\right) \\
& S^{\prime}(x)= y^{\prime}(x)-\frac{t(1-t)(1-2 t)}{12} h^{3} y^{I V}(x)-\frac{2-45 t^{2}(1-t)^{2}}{360} h^{4} y^{V}(x)+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
& S^{\prime \prime}(x)= y^{\prime \prime}(x)-\frac{1-6 t(1-t)}{12} h^{2} y^{I V}(x)+\frac{t(1-t)(1-2 t)}{6} h^{3} y^{V}(x)+o\left(h^{3}\right), \\
& S^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)=y^{\prime \prime \prime}(x)+\frac{1-2 t}{2} h y^{I V}(x)+\frac{1-6 t(1-t)}{12} h^{2} y^{V}(x)+o\left(h^{2}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

We see that the superconvergence takes place in the same points as well for quadratic/linear rational and cubic spline interpolants.

## Chapter 6

## Linear/linear rational spline collocation

In this chapter we will study the linear/linear rational spline collocation method for a boundary value problem of second order ordinary linear differential equation. Before, let us describe the problem and assumptions about it with corresponding consequences.

We consider the differential equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
y^{\prime \prime}(x)+p(x) y^{\prime}(x)+q(x) y(x)=f(x), \quad x \in(a, b) \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
y(a)=\alpha, \quad y(b)=\beta \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose that the problem has a solution $y \in C^{2}[a, b]$. Let $p, q, f$ be continuous and $q(x) \leq q<0, x \in(a, b)$. Then the solution of problem (6.1), (6.2) is unique. Let us prove that.

We show that the homogeneous problem corresponding to (6.1), (6.2), i.e.,

$$
\begin{align*}
& y^{\prime \prime}(x)+p(x) y^{\prime}(x)+q(x) y(x)=0, \quad x \in(a, b)  \tag{6.3}\\
& y(a)=0, \quad y(b)=0 \tag{6.4}
\end{align*}
$$

has only the trivial solution.
Firstly, let $p \in C^{1}[a, b]$. We use the change of variable

$$
y(x)=e^{-\frac{1}{2} \int p(x) d x} z(x)
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
y^{\prime}(x) & =e^{-\frac{1}{2} \int p(x) d x}\left(-\frac{1}{2} p(x) z(x)+z^{\prime}(x)\right) \\
y^{\prime \prime}(x) & =e^{-\frac{1}{2} \int p(x) d x}\left(\frac{1}{4} p^{2}(x) z(x)-p(x) z^{\prime}(x)-\frac{1}{2} p^{\prime}(x) z(x)+z^{\prime \prime}(x)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

After replacing the obtained derivatives in (6.3), we have

$$
\begin{align*}
& z^{\prime \prime}(x)+\left(-\frac{1}{2} p^{\prime}(x)-\frac{1}{4} p^{2}(x)+q(x)\right) z(x)=0, \quad x \in(a, b)  \tag{6.5}\\
& z(a)=0, z(b)=0
\end{align*}
$$

Let $z$ be the solution to (6.5). Now multiply the equation (6.5) by $z$ and integrate. Then

$$
\int_{a}^{b} z^{\prime \prime}(x) z(x) d x+\int_{a}^{b}\left(-\frac{1}{2} p^{\prime}(x)-\frac{1}{4} p^{2}(x)+q(x)\right) z^{2}(x) d x=0
$$

which gives us with the help of integration by parts
$-\int_{a}^{b}\left(z^{\prime}(x)\right)^{2} d x+\int_{a}^{b} p(x) z(x) z^{\prime}(x) d x-\frac{1}{4} \int_{a}^{b} p^{2}(x) z^{2}(x) d x+\int_{a}^{b} q(x) z^{2}(x) d x=0$.
Note that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{a}^{b}\left(z^{\prime}(x)\right)^{2} d x-\int_{a}^{b} p(x) z(x) z^{\prime}(x) d x+\frac{1}{4} \int_{a}^{b} & p^{2}(x) z^{2}(x) d x \\
& =\int_{a}^{b}\left(\frac{1}{2} p(x) z(x)-z^{\prime}(x)\right)^{2} d x \geq 0
\end{aligned}
$$

and $\int_{a}^{b} q(x) z^{2}(x) d x \leq 0$. So we get $\int_{a}^{b} q(x) z^{2}(x) d x=0$ which implies $z=0$ a.e. in $[a, b]$ and it follows $z=0$. This, in turn, gives $y=0$ for the solution of (6.3), (6.4).

Secondly, let $p \notin C^{1}[a, b]$, but $p \in C[a, b]$. We can take $p_{n} \in C^{1}[a, b]$ so that $\left\|p_{n}-p\right\|_{C} \rightarrow 0$. Now let

$$
\begin{aligned}
& y(x)=e^{-\frac{1}{2} \int_{a}^{x} p_{n}(x) d x} z_{n}(x) \\
& y(x)=e^{-\frac{1}{2} \int_{a}^{x} p(x) d x} z(x)
\end{aligned}
$$

which gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
& z_{n}(x)=e^{\frac{1}{2} \int_{a}^{x} p_{n}(x) d x} y(x), \\
& z(x)=e^{\frac{1}{2} \int_{a}^{x} p(x) d x} y(x)
\end{aligned}
$$

and $\left\|z_{n}-z\right\|_{C} \rightarrow 0$. Then $z_{n}$ is the solution of the counterpart of (6.5) with $p_{n}$ and we get by the same discussion as in first part of the proof that $z_{n}=0$. Thus, $z=0$ and $y=0$.

Note that in this reasoning it is sufficient to suppose that $q(x)<0$ a.e. in $[a, b]$.

### 6.1 Description of the spline collocation method

A mesh $a=x_{0}<x_{1}<\ldots<x_{n}=b$ will be used representing the spline knots $x_{i}=a+i h, i=0, \ldots, n, h=(b-a) / n, n \in \mathbb{N}$. We define the collocation points $\xi_{i}=x_{i-1}+h / 2, i=1, \ldots, n$.

In our discussion we use again the linear/linear rational spline representation by spline values (Section 2.3). We remind that in this representation we have the notations $S\left(x_{i}\right)=S_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n$, and $S\left(\xi_{i}\right)=\bar{S}_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$.

In collocation we require the spline $S$ to satisfy the differential equation at points $\xi_{i}$ and the boundary conditions:

$$
\begin{align*}
& S^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)+p\left(\xi_{i}\right) S^{\prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)+q\left(\xi_{i}\right) S\left(\xi_{i}\right)=f\left(\xi_{i}\right), \quad i=1, \ldots, n,  \tag{6.6}\\
& S(a)=\alpha, \quad S(b)=\beta \tag{6.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Internal equations (2.12) together with equations (6.6) and (6.7) form a nonlinear system with respect to the unknowns $\bar{S}_{1}, \ldots, \bar{S}_{n}, S_{0}, \ldots, S_{n}$.

Note, that the collocation problem is similar for quadratic spline case. The convergence rate $O\left(h^{2}\right)$ for quadratic spline collocation method is known [30, 39]. Let us mention that $O\left(h^{2}\right)$ convergence rate is based on superconvergence property of interpolating splines. This was discovered in [30] and developed extensively in [35, 39]. It was shown in [39] that the main part of error at quadratic spline collocation is actually several times less than was obtained in [30]. We will study such a problem in the case of linear/linear rational splines.

### 6.2 Transformation of the system and main properties of the derivatives

Let us start our investigation by transforming the system (2.12), (6.6), (6.7) to a suitable form in order to establish some estimates which will be used in the proof of existence of solution.

Likewise to (4.4) in linear/linear rational spline interpolation discussion let us introduce functions $\varphi_{i}$ and write equations (2.12) in the form

$$
\begin{align*}
& \varphi_{i}\left(S_{i-1}, \bar{S}_{i}, S_{i}, \bar{S}_{i+1}, S_{i+1}\right)=\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-\bar{S}_{i+1}\right)  \tag{6.8}\\
& \quad-\left(\bar{S}_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)=0, \quad i=1, \ldots, n-1
\end{align*}
$$

Observe that if $y$ is the solution of (6.1) we may write for $i=1, \ldots, n$

$$
\begin{equation*}
y^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)+p\left(\xi_{i}\right) y^{\prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)+q\left(\xi_{i}\right) y\left(\xi_{i}\right)=f\left(\xi_{i}\right) \tag{6.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using (2.10) and (2.11) at point $\xi_{i}$ in (6.6) we get for $i=1, \ldots, n$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{-16\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(2 \bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}-S_{i}\right)}{h^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)^{2}}  \tag{6.10}\\
& \quad+p\left(\xi_{i}\right) \frac{4\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)}{h\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)}+q\left(\xi_{i}\right) \bar{S}_{i}=f\left(\xi_{i}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Now subtract equation (6.10) from (6.9) and multiply the result by $h^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)$. This gives the following equations:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \psi_{i}\left(S_{i-1}, \bar{S}_{i}, S_{i}\right) \\
& =16\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(2 \bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}-S_{i}\right)+h^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)^{2} y^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right) \\
& \quad-p\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(4 h\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)+h^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)^{2} y^{\prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right)  \tag{6.11}\\
& \quad-h^{2} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)^{2}\left(\bar{S}_{i}-y\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right)=0, \quad i=1, \ldots, n
\end{align*}
$$

where we also introduce functions $\psi_{i}$.
We write the boundary conditions (with the help of notations $\varphi_{0}$ and $\varphi_{n}$ for the left side of equations) as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi_{0}\left(S_{0}\right)=h^{2}\left(S_{0}-\alpha\right)=0, \quad \varphi_{n}\left(S_{n}\right)=h^{2}\left(S_{n}-\beta\right)=0 \tag{6.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $S=\left(S_{0}, \bar{S}_{1}, S_{1}, \ldots, \bar{S}_{n}, S_{n}\right)$. We point out, that although we denote by $S$ a spline and the vector of its knot values, from the context it is clear which object we deal with. Now the internal equations (6.8), collocation equations (6.11) and boundary equations (6.12) together form a nonlinear system $F(S)=0$ with $F: \mathbb{R}^{2 n+1} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{2 n+1}$ and $F(S)=\left(\varphi_{0}(S), \psi_{1}(S), \varphi_{1}(S), \ldots, \psi_{n}(S), \varphi_{n}(S)\right.$ ) (here and in the sequel we allow the whole vector of spline knot values $S$ in $\varphi_{i}(S)$ and $\psi_{i}(S)$ instead of some particular components as in (6.8), (6.11) and (6.12)). The system $F(S)=0$ will be considered as basic system and it contains all the requirements on spline values. Our aim is to show that this system has an appropriate solution and then obtain the convergence results.

In order to establish our goals we need to use the linear/linear rational spline interpolant $S$ satisfying (4.1) and (4.12) for the solution $y$ of problem (6.1), (6.2). Denote this special interpolant by $S_{*}$ and define its vector of values by $S^{*}=\left(S_{*}\left(x_{0}\right), S_{*}\left(\xi_{1}\right), S_{*}\left(x_{1}\right), \ldots, S_{*}\left(\xi_{n}\right), S_{*}\left(x_{n}\right)\right) \in \mathbb{R}^{2 n+1}$. It occurs that around the vector $S^{*}$ we succeed in finding a set with sufficiently small size containing the vector of values of approximate solution.

Let us assume now and in the sequel that the solution $y$ of (6.1), (6.2) is such that $y \in C^{4}[a, b]$ and $y^{\prime}(x)>0$ for all $x \in[a, b]$ or $y^{\prime}(x)<0$ for all $x \in[a, b]$. In addition, let $p^{\prime}, q \in C[a, b]$ and $q(x) \leq q<0, x \in[a, b]$. Our aim is to estimate
$F\left(S^{*}\right)$ and $F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$. Let $y_{i}=y\left(x_{i}\right), i=0, \ldots, n$, and $\bar{y}_{i}=y\left(\xi_{i}\right), i=1, \ldots, n$, similar notation will be used in the case of derivatives and other functions. Based on (4.13) and using for the special interpolant $S_{*}$ the Taylor expansions up to the fourth derivative in the rest

$$
\begin{aligned}
S_{i-1}^{*} & =\bar{y}_{i}-\frac{h}{2} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{8} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{48} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{384} \bar{y}_{i}^{I V}-\frac{h^{4}}{128} \bar{\rho}_{i}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
S_{i}^{*} & =\bar{y}_{i}+\frac{h}{2} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{8} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{48} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{384} \bar{y}_{i}^{I V}-\frac{h^{4}}{128} \bar{\rho}_{i}+o\left(h^{4}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
\rho=y^{I V}-4 \frac{y^{\prime \prime} y^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y^{\prime}}+3 \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}}{\left(y^{\prime}\right)^{2}},
$$

straightforward calculations give

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\psi_{i}\left(S^{*}\right)=h^{6}\left(-\frac{1}{24}\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2} \bar{y}_{i}^{I V}+\frac{1}{4} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{1}{4}\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}+p\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(\frac{1}{24}\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{1}{16} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right)\right) \\
+o\left(h^{6}\right) . \tag{6.13}
\end{array}
$$

Due to (2.12) or (6.8) we have $\varphi_{i}\left(S^{*}\right)=0, i=1, \ldots, n-1$. In addition, special boundary conditions (4.12) for $S_{*}$ assure $\varphi_{0}\left(S^{*}\right)=o\left(h^{6}\right)$ and $\varphi_{n}\left(S^{*}\right)=o\left(h^{6}\right)$. Thus, we can conclude that $\left\|F\left(S^{*}\right)\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{6}\right)$.

Next, we are interested in the matrix $F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$. In the rows corresponding to equations (6.11) there are

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}= & 16\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)-2\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)-2 h^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right) \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime} \\
& +p\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(4 h\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)-2 h^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right) \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right) \\
& +2 h^{2} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(\bar{S}_{i}-\bar{y}_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i}}= & -16\left(\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\right)^{2}+32\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right) \\
& -4 h p\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)-\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)\right)-h^{2} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)^{2} \\
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}= & 16\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-2\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\right)+2 h^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right) \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime} \\
& -p\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(4 h\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{1-1}\right)\left(\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)+\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\right)+2 h^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right) \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right) \\
& -2 h^{2} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(\bar{S}_{i}-\bar{y}_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

They give

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}+\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i}}+\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}=-h^{2} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)^{2} \tag{6.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using again the Taylor formula at the point $\xi_{i}$ we may write

$$
-h^{2} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}^{*}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)^{2}=-h^{4} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{5}\right)
$$

and, in addition, have the partial derivatives for $i=1, \ldots, n$ in the form

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}\right)= & -4 h^{2}\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+h^{3} p\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2} \\
& -h^{4}\left(\frac{1}{3} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{3}{4}\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{1}{2} p\left(\xi_{i}\right) \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i}}\left(S^{*}\right)= & 8 h^{2}\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+h^{4}\left(\frac{2}{3} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{3}{2}\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}-p\left(\xi_{i}\right) \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}-q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right), \tag{6.15}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}\right)= & -4 h^{2}\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}-h^{3} p\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2} \\
& -h^{4}\left(\frac{1}{3} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{3}{4}\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{1}{2} p\left(\xi_{i}\right) \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime} \bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

It is now immediate to verify that, for small $h$, we get the diagonal dominance in rows corresponding to the collocation equations. Namely (recall the assumption $q(x) \leq q<0, x \in(a, b))$

$$
\left|\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i}}\left(S^{*}\right)\right|-\left|\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}\right)\right|-\left|\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}\right)\right|=-h^{4} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{5}\right) .
$$

In the rows of matrix $F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$ corresponding to equations (6.8) we calculate the derivatives

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}} & =-\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-\bar{S}_{i+1}\right)+\left(\bar{S}_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i}} & =-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-\bar{S}_{i+1}\right)-\left(\bar{S}_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}} & =\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}+S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-\bar{S}_{i+1}\right)+\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(\bar{S}_{i+1}-S_{i}+S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right), \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i+1}} & =-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)-\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}} & =\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)-\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\left(\bar{S}_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Obviously, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}+\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i}}+\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}+\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i+1}}+\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}=0 \tag{6.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observe also that, for $z=\left(S_{0}, \bar{S}_{1}, S_{1}, \ldots, \bar{S}_{n}, S_{n}\right)$, (6.16) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j} \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial z_{j} \partial z_{k}}=0 \tag{6.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\sum_{j} \frac{\partial^{3} \varphi_{i}}{\partial z_{j} \partial z_{k} \partial z_{l}}=0
$$

for all $i, k, l$.
Using $S_{i}^{*}=y_{i}-\frac{h^{4}}{128} \rho_{i}+o\left(h^{4}\right)$ and $\bar{S}_{i}^{*}=\bar{y}_{i}$ we perform the following Taylor expansions

$$
\begin{align*}
S_{i-1}^{*} & =y_{i}-h y_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}-\frac{h^{4}}{128} \rho_{i}+o\left(h^{4}\right) \\
\bar{S}_{i}^{*} & =y_{i}-\frac{h}{2} y_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{8} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{48} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{384} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right) \\
\bar{S}_{i+1}^{*} & =y_{i}+\frac{h}{2} y_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{8} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{48} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{384} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right)  \tag{6.18}\\
S_{i+1}^{*} & =y_{i}+h y_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}-\frac{h^{4}}{128} \rho_{i}+o\left(h^{4}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

which in all give

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}\right) & =\frac{1}{4} h^{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+\frac{1}{4} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+h^{4}\left(\frac{1}{48} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{7}{64}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i}}\left(S^{*}\right) & =-h^{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{1}{2} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-h^{4}\left(\frac{1}{3} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{1}{8}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}\right) & =\frac{3}{2} h^{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+h^{4}\left(\frac{5}{8} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{15}{32}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right)  \tag{6.19}\\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}\right) & =-h^{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+\frac{1}{2} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-h^{4}\left(\frac{1}{3} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{1}{8}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}\right) & =\frac{1}{4} h^{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{1}{4} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+h^{4}\left(\frac{1}{48} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{7}{64}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Clearly, by (6.19), there is no diagonal dominance in rows of $F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$ corresponding to the internal equations. Let us mention that, instead of (6.18) and (6.19), we could use shorter expansions to detect this nondominance but we need them in such a form later.

Because of the absence of diagonal dominance in rows of $F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$ corresponding to the internal equations we replace the equations (6.8) in $F(S)=0$ by equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}_{i}(S)=-\frac{1}{2} \psi_{i}(S)+\frac{16}{3} \varphi_{i}(S)-\frac{1}{2} \psi_{i+1}(S)=0 \tag{6.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

and, thereby, transform the basic system into the form $\tilde{F}(S)=M F(S)=0$, where the entries of $M$ are $m_{i, i-1}=m_{i, i+1}=-\frac{1}{2}, m_{i i}=\frac{16}{3}$ in rows corresponding to the internal equations, $m_{i i}=1$ in other rows and $m_{i j}=0$ elsewhere. This assures $\|M\|_{\infty \rightarrow \infty} \leq$ const and $\left\|M^{-1}\right\|_{\infty \longrightarrow \infty} \leq$ const which we will use later.

Basing on (6.15) and (6.19) we calculate

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}\right)\right|-\left|\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}\right)\right|-\left|\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i}}\left(S^{*}\right)\right|-\left|\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}\right)\right| & -\left|\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}\right)\right| \\
& =-h^{4} q\left(x_{i}\right)\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{5}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, for small $h$, the matrix $\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$ has the diagonal dominance in rows. This implies the invertibility of $\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$ and hence, of $F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$. All in all, we achieve $\left\|\left(\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1}\right\|_{\infty \longrightarrow \infty}=O\left(h^{-4}\right)$ and $\left\|\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1}\right\|_{\infty \longrightarrow \infty}=O\left(h^{-4}\right)$.

### 6.3 Application of fixed point principle

In this section we use the Bohl-Brouwer fixed point theorem to show the existence of solution of the basic system (6.8), (6.11), (6.12) which we denoted in previous section by $F(S)=0$. Firstly, we transform the basic system to an equivalent form and then carry out an analysis with the help of Taylor expansion.

Consider the equation $S=G(S)$ where $G(S)=S-\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} F(S)$. Then $G$ is continuous. The equation $F(S)=0$ is equivalent to $S=G(S)$. Let us introduce the sets $K=\prod_{i=0}^{2 n} K_{i}, K_{i}=\left[S_{i}^{*}-c h^{2}, S_{i}^{*}+c h^{2}\right]$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tilde{K}=\{S \in K \mid & \left|\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{*}\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right)-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{*}\left(x_{i-1}\right)\right)\right| \leq \tilde{c} h^{3}, \\
& \left.\left|\left(S_{i}-S_{*}\left(x_{i}\right)\right)-\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{*}\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right)\right| \leq \tilde{c} h^{3}, i=1, \ldots, n\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

with numbers $c>0$ and $\tilde{c}>0$ independent of $h$ and which will be specified later. It is clear that the set $\tilde{K}$ is convex and compact. Our main purpose is now to show that $G: \tilde{K} \rightarrow \tilde{K}$. This allows us to use Bohl-Brouwer fixed point theorem.

To begin with we show that $G: \tilde{K} \rightarrow K$. The Taylor expansion of $F(S)$ at point $S^{*}$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
G(S)-S^{*}= & -\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} F\left(S^{*}\right)-\frac{1}{2}\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} F^{\prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}  \tag{6.21}\\
& -\frac{1}{6}\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} F^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{3}
\end{align*}
$$

From the previous section we already know that $\left\|\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1}\right\|=O\left(h^{-4}\right)$ and $\left\|F\left(S^{*}\right)\right\|=O\left(h^{6}\right)$. It follows $\left\|\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} F\left(S^{*}\right)\right\| \leq c_{0} h^{2}$ for some $c_{0}>0$.

In order to estimate the terms with second and third derivatives in (6.21) we state the following technical result.

Lemma 6.1. Suppose $A=\left(a_{i j}\right)$ is a $n \times n$ matrix with $\sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{i j}=0, i=1, \ldots, n$, and $\sum_{i=1}^{n} a_{i j}=0, j=1, \ldots, n$. Then $(A x, x)=(A B z, B z)=\left(B^{T} A B z, z\right)$ for all $x \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ with $z_{1}=0, z_{i}=x_{i}-x_{i-1}, i=2, \ldots, n$, and $B=\left(b_{i j}\right)$ with $b_{i j}=1$ for $i \geq j$ and $b_{i j}=0$ for $i<j$.

Proof. We have

$$
\begin{aligned}
(A x, x) & =\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(\sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{i j} x_{j}\right) x_{i}=\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(\sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{i j}\left(x_{j}-x_{1}\right)\right) x_{i}=\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(\sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{i j}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{j} z_{k}\right)\right) x_{i} \\
& =\sum_{i=1}^{n} \sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{i j}(B z)_{j} x_{i}=(A B z, x)=\left(B z, A^{T} x\right)=\left(B z, A^{T} B z\right)=(A B z, B z) .
\end{aligned}
$$

In order to estimate $\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} F^{\prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}$ we point out, that the components of $F^{\prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}$ are $\varphi_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}$ or $\psi_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}$. Any symmetric matrix $\varphi_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right), i=1, \ldots, n-1$, has only one $5 \times 5$ nonzero diagonal block with the property (6.17). Let us use now Lemma 6.1 , where we take $A=\varphi_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$. Then $B^{T} A B$ has only one 4 x 4 nonzero diagonal block with entries of order $O(h)$. By the inclusion $S \in \tilde{K}$ we can conclude $\varphi_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}=O\left(h^{7}\right), i=1, \ldots, n-1$. Clearly, $\varphi_{0}^{\prime \prime}=\varphi_{n}^{\prime \prime}=0$.

For the $\psi_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}$ we calculate from (6.14)

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}^{2}}+\frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i} \partial S_{i-1}}+\frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i} \partial S_{i-1}}=2 h^{2} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1} \partial \bar{S}_{i}}+\frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i}^{2}}+\frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i} \partial \bar{S}_{i}}=0, \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1} \partial S_{i}}+\frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i} \partial S_{i}}+\frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}^{2}}=-2 h^{2} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let us split $\psi_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$ as $A_{0}+A_{1}$ where $A_{0}$ has only a 3 x 3 nonzero diagonal block of second order derivatives of $\psi_{i}$ except $\frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}^{2}}$ replaced by $\frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}^{2}}-2 h^{2} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)$ and $\frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}^{2}}$ replaced by $\frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}^{2}}+2 h^{2} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)$. Then $A_{0}$ has the property of zero sum of entries by rows and columns needed in Lemma 6.1. In this case $B^{T} A_{0} B$ has a 2 x 2 nonzero diagonal block with entries of order $O(h)$ and hence $A_{0}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}=O\left(h^{7}\right)$ due to $S \in \tilde{K}$. The matrix $A_{1}$ has only two nonzero entries of order $O\left(h^{3}\right)$ and $A_{1}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}=O\left(h^{7}\right)$ by $S \in K$. Thus, $\psi_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}=O\left(h^{7}\right)$. Again, due to $\left\|\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1}\right\|=O\left(h^{-4}\right)$ we establish the estimate

$$
\left\|\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} F^{\prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}\right\| \leq\left(c_{2}+\tilde{c}_{2} c^{2}\right) h^{3}
$$

for some $c_{2}, \tilde{c}_{2}>0$ and all $S \in \tilde{K}\left(c^{2}\right.$ appears from the estimate of $\left.A_{1}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}\right)$.
Similar reasoning allows to show $\left\|\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} F^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{3}\right\| \leq\left(c_{3}+\tilde{c}_{3} c^{3}\right) h^{4}$ for some $c_{3}, \tilde{c}_{3}>0$ and all $S \in \tilde{K}$.

All estimates together yield that it holds $G(S) \in K$ for all $S \in \tilde{K}$ if

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{0} h^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\left(c_{2}+\tilde{c}_{2} c^{2}\right) h^{3}+\frac{1}{6}\left(c_{3}+\tilde{c}_{3} c^{3}\right) h^{4} \leq c h^{2} \tag{6.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

which takes place if we choose, e.g., $c=2 c_{0}$ and then $h$ sufficiently small. All in all, $G: \tilde{K} \rightarrow K$.

Our next goal is to show that $G(S) \in \tilde{K}$ for $S \in \tilde{K}$. We know already that $G(S) \in K$. Additional conditions in $\tilde{K}$ concern adjacent components. Consider now (6.21) as $G(S)-S^{*}=A x$ where $A=\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1}=\left(a_{i j}\right)$ and $x \in \mathbb{R}^{2 n+1}$, $\|x\|=O\left(h^{6}\right)$. Then we have

$$
[A x]_{i}-[A x]_{i+1}=\sum_{j}\left(a_{i j}-a_{i+1, j}\right) x_{j}
$$

and in the case of $a_{i j}-a_{i+1, j}=O\left(h^{-2}\right)$ we get

$$
\left|[A x]_{i}-[A x]_{i+1}\right| \leq \sum_{j}\left|a_{i j}-a_{i+1, j}\right|\left|x_{j}\right|=O\left(h^{3}\right)
$$

as needed for $G(S) \in \tilde{K}$. Actually, here we will transform the basic system $F(S)=0$ into the form $\tilde{F}(S)=M F(S)=0$ with some regular suitable matrix $M$ having the property that $\|M\|$ and $\left\|M^{-1}\right\|$ are bounded uniformly in $n$ (therefore in $h$ ). It turns out that we get the suitable matrix $M$ if we replace the equations $\varphi_{i}(S)=0, i=1, \ldots, n-1$, by the equations

$$
\tilde{\varphi}_{i}(S)=\frac{1}{2} \psi_{i}(S)+8 \varphi_{i}(S)+\frac{1}{2} \psi_{i+1}(S)=0
$$

Then we see the entries of $\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$ from (6.15) and (6.19) as

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}\right)= & h^{3}\left(4 y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{1}{2} p_{i}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}\right) \\
& +h^{4}\left(-\frac{1}{2} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{3}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{1}{4} p_{i} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{1}{4} p_{i}^{\prime}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right), \\
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i}}\left(S^{*}\right)= & -4 h^{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}-8 h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} \\
& +h^{4}\left(-\frac{4}{3} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{5}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{1}{2} p_{i} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{1}{2} q_{i}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right), \\
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}\right)= & 8 h^{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+h^{4}\left(\frac{11}{3} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-4\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}+\frac{3}{2} p_{i} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{1}{2} p_{i}^{\prime}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right),  \tag{6.23}\\
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{i}}{\partial \bar{S}_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}\right)= & -4 h^{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+8 h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} \\
& +h^{4}\left(-\frac{4}{3} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{5}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{1}{2} p_{i} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{1}{2} q_{i}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right), \\
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}\right)= & h^{3}\left(-4 y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{1}{2} p_{i}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}\right) \\
& +h^{4}\left(-\frac{1}{2} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{3}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{1}{4} p_{i} y_{i}^{\prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{1}{4} p_{i}^{\prime}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

together with those obtained from (6.12). For (6.23), we observe the diagonal dominance in rows with the difference $-h^{4} q_{i}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{5}\right)$.

It follows now that $G(S)-S^{*}=\left(F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} x=\left(\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} M x$ with $\|M x\|=O\left(h^{6}\right)$ and we can use the Bohl-Brouwer fixed point theorem, by which the set $\tilde{K}$ contains a fixed point of the function $G$ which is also a solution of the basic system.

To complete this section we need to prove the following lemma for the matrix $A=\left(\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1}=\left(a_{i j}\right)$

Lemma 6.2. It holds $\left|a_{i j}-a_{i+1, j}\right|=O\left(h^{-2}\right)$.
Proof. We give the proof in the case of $p=0$ in equation (6.1) which simplifies considerably the writings.

Dividing the equations $\psi_{i}(S)=0$ by $4 h^{2}\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}$ we transform the derivatives in
(6.15) into the form

$$
\begin{align*}
& -\left(1+h^{2} r_{i}\right)+O\left(h^{3}\right), \\
& 2\left(1+h^{2}\left(r_{i}-s_{i}\right)\right)+O\left(h^{3}\right),  \tag{6.24}\\
& -\left(1+h^{2} r_{i}\right)+O\left(h^{3}\right),
\end{align*}
$$

where $r_{i}=\frac{1}{12} \frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}}-\frac{1}{4}\left(\frac{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime \prime}}{\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}}\right)^{2}, s_{i}=\frac{1}{8} \bar{q}_{i}$.
We will eliminate in the equations of $\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right) A=I$ ( $I$ being identity matrix) containing the derivatives from (6.23) the first and the last ones. For that, let us expand (6.15) and also (6.15) for $i+1$ at the point $x_{i}$. The standard elimination and division by $4 h^{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}$ gives the equations with coefficients of the form (6.24) with $r_{i}=\frac{7}{12} \frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime}}-\frac{11}{16}\left(\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime}}\right)^{2}+\frac{1}{8} q_{i}$ and $s_{i}=\frac{1}{8} q_{i}$. Dividing also equations (6.12) by $h^{2}$ we will study the equation $\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right) A=I$ with the entries of $\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$ of the form (6.24) in interior rows and show that here, for $A=\left(a_{i j}\right)$, it holds $\left|a_{i j}-a_{i+1, j}\right|=O(1)$.

For simplicity in writings we suppose that the rows and columns of $A$ have the indices from 1 to $n$. We omit in (6.24) and in calculations the terms of $O\left(h^{3}\right)$ (see the remark at the end of the proof).

Let us start with the first column of $\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right) A$. Clearly, $a_{11}=1$. From

$$
-\left(1+h^{2} r_{2}\right) a_{11}+2\left(1+h^{2}\left(r_{2}-s_{2}\right)\right) a_{21}-\left(1+h^{2} r_{2}\right) a_{31}=0
$$

we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{21}-\frac{1}{2}\left(1+h^{2} s_{2}\right) a_{31}=\frac{1}{2}\left(1+h^{2} s_{2}\right) \tag{6.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
a_{21}-a_{31}=\frac{1}{2}\left(-1+h^{2} s_{2}\right) a_{31}+\frac{1}{2}\left(1+h^{2} s_{2}\right) .
$$

Straightforward calculations lead to the equalities

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{i 1}-\frac{i-1}{i}\left(1+h^{2}\left(b_{i 2} s_{2}+\ldots+b_{i i} s_{i}\right)\right) a_{i+1,1}=\frac{1}{i}\left(1+h^{2}\left(c_{i 2} s_{2}+\ldots+c_{i i} s_{i}\right)\right) \tag{6.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
a_{i 1}-a_{i+1,1}= & \frac{1}{i}\left(-1+h^{2}\left((i-1) b_{i 2} s_{2}+\ldots+(i-1) b_{i i} s_{i}\right)\right) a_{i+1,1} \\
& +\frac{1}{i}\left(1+h^{2}\left(c_{i 2} s_{2}+\ldots+c_{i i} s_{i}\right)\right), \quad i=2, \ldots, n-1 \tag{6.27}
\end{align*}
$$

In (6.25) we have $b_{22}=c_{22}=1$. Successive increasing of index $i$ allows to establish the relations

$$
\begin{aligned}
& b_{i j}=\frac{i-2}{i} b_{i-1, j}, \quad j=2, \ldots, i-1, \quad b_{i i}=\frac{2(i-1)}{i}, \\
& c_{i j}=c_{i-1, j}+b_{i j}, \quad j=2, \ldots, i-1, \quad c_{i i}=b_{i i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, for $i \geq 2$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
(i-1) \sum_{j=2}^{i} b_{i j} & =(i-1)\left(\sum_{j=2}^{i-1} b_{i j}+b_{i i}\right)=(i-1)\left(\sum_{j=2}^{i-1} \frac{i-2}{i} b_{i-1, j}+\frac{2(i-1)}{i}\right) \\
& =2 \frac{i-1}{i}(i-1)+\frac{i-1}{i}\left(\frac{2(i-2)}{i-1}(i-2)+\frac{i-2}{i-1}(i-3) \sum_{j=2}^{i-2} b_{i-2, j}\right) \\
& <2\left((i-1)+(i-2)+\ldots+b_{22}\right)=i(i-1) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, $\sum_{j=2}^{i} b_{i j} \leq i \leq n$ and, consequently,

$$
\begin{equation*}
h^{2} \sum_{j=2}^{i} b_{i j} s_{j}=O(h) \text { with } \sum_{j=2}^{i} b_{i j} s_{j}<0 . \tag{6.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, we establish

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j=2}^{i} c_{i j} \leq i(i-1) \text { and } h^{2} \sum_{j=2}^{i} c_{i j} s_{j}=O(1) \tag{6.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Write (6.26) in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{a_{i 1}}{i-1}=\left(1+b_{i}\right) \frac{a_{i+1,1}}{i}+\frac{1}{(i-1) i}\left(1+c_{i}\right) \tag{6.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $b_{i}=h^{2} \sum_{j=2}^{i} b_{i j} s_{j}$ and $c_{i}=h^{2} \sum_{j=2}^{i} c_{i j} s_{j}$. Denote now $z_{i}=\frac{a_{i 1}}{i-1}$, $i=2, \ldots, n$. Evidently, $a_{n 1}=0$ and $z_{n}=0$. By (6.29), from (6.30) we get $\left|z_{n-1}\right| \leq \frac{C_{1}}{(n-2)(n-1)}$ with some constant $C_{1}$. Then, successively using (6.30), (6.28) which implies $1+b_{i} \leq 1$, and also the estimate of $z_{n-1}$, we have

$$
\left|z_{n-i}\right| \leq C_{2}\left(\frac{1}{(n-i-1)(n-i)}+\ldots+\frac{1}{(n-2)(n-1)}\right) \leq C
$$

$C_{2}, C$ being positive constants. We have shown that (recall that $a_{11}=1$ and $a_{n 1}=0$ )

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{a_{i 1}}{i-1}=O(1), i=n-1, \ldots, 2 \tag{6.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now (6.27) with the help of (6.28), (6.29) and (6.31) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|a_{i 1}-a_{i+1,1}\right|=O(1), i=1, \ldots, n-1 \tag{6.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

The calculations in the second column of $\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right) A$ are almost identical. E.g., $a_{12}=0$ and formula (6.26) is replaced by

$$
a_{i 2}-\frac{i-1}{i}\left(1+h^{2}\left(b_{i 2} s_{2}+\ldots+b_{i i} s_{i}\right)\right) a_{i+1,2}=\frac{1}{i}\left(1+h^{2}\left(c_{i 2} s_{2}+\ldots+c_{i i} s_{i}-r_{2}\right)\right)
$$

with corresponding difference in (6.27). The counterpart of (6.32) holds.
Let us discuss more generally columns with indices $k=2, \ldots, \frac{n+1}{2}$ (observe that in our reasoning $n$ is actually odd number and due to the symmetrical structure of $F^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$ there is no need to consider $k>\frac{n+1}{2}$ because we could start from the right bottom of $A$ with $a_{n n}=1$ ). We have $a_{1 k}=0$ and get

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{i k}-\frac{i-1}{i}\left(1+h^{2}\left(b_{i 2} s_{2}+\ldots+b_{i i} s_{i}\right)\right) a_{i+1, k}=0, i<k \tag{6.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies $\left|\frac{a_{i k}}{i-1}\right| \leq\left|\frac{a_{i+1, k}}{i}\right|, i=1, \ldots, k-1$. From (6.33) it follows

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{i k}-a_{i+1, k}=\frac{1}{i}\left(-1+h^{2}\left((i-1) b_{i 2} s_{2}+\ldots+(i-1) b_{i i} s_{i}\right)\right) a_{i+1, k}, i<k \tag{6.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

Again, direct calculations give

$$
\begin{align*}
a_{i k}-\frac{i-1}{i} & \left(1+h^{2}\left(b_{i 2} s_{2}+\ldots+b_{i i} s_{i}\right)\right) a_{i+1, k}  \tag{6.35}\\
& =\frac{k-1}{i}\left(1+h^{2}\left(c_{i 2} s_{2}+\ldots+c_{i i} s_{i}-r_{k}\right)\right), \quad i=k, \ldots, n-1,
\end{align*}
$$

and this implies

$$
\begin{align*}
a_{i k}-a_{i+1, k}= & \frac{1}{i}\left(-1+h^{2}\left(b_{i 2} s_{2}+\ldots+b_{i i} s_{i}\right)\right) a_{i+1, k}  \tag{6.36}\\
& +\frac{k-1}{i}\left(1+h^{2}\left(c_{i 2} s_{2}+\ldots+c_{i i} s_{i}-r_{k}\right)\right), \quad i=k, \ldots, n-1
\end{align*}
$$

Denoting here $z_{i}=\frac{a_{i k}}{i-1}, i=2, \ldots, n$, we have $z_{n}=0$. The recursion (6.35) has the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{i}=\frac{k-1}{(i-1) i}\left(1+c_{i}\right)+\left(1+b_{i}\right) z_{i+1}, i=k, \ldots, n-1 \tag{6.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Basing again on (6.29), it holds $\left|1+c_{i}\right| \leq C_{1} \mid$ and $\left|z_{n-1}\right| \leq \frac{k-1}{(n-1)(n-2)} C_{1}$.
Successive use of (6.37) gives in this case for $i=2, \ldots, n-k$

$$
\left|z_{n-i}\right| \leq C_{2}(k-1)\left(\frac{1}{(k-1) k}+\ldots+\frac{2}{(n-2)(n-1)}\right)
$$

But

$$
\sum_{i=k}^{n-1} \frac{1}{(i-1) i} \leq \sum_{i=k-1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{i^{2}} \leq \int_{k-1}^{\infty} \frac{d x}{x^{2}}=\frac{1}{k-1}
$$

and hence, we have shown that

$$
\left|\frac{a_{i k}}{i-1}\right|=O(1), i=2, \ldots, n-1
$$

This, in turn, by (6.34) and (6.36) gives

$$
\left|a_{i k}-a_{i+1, k}\right|=O(1), i=1, \ldots, n-1,
$$

which was the assertion of Lemma 6.2.
Remark. We can observe that the rest terms in (6.15) and (6.23) and those occurring in calculations do not spoil the reasoning. Namely, if $\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)=A+B$, $\|B\|=O\left(h^{5}\right)$ with $\left\|A^{-1}\right\|=O\left(h^{-4}\right)$ and $\left|\left[A^{-1} x\right]_{i}-\left[A^{-1} x\right]_{i+1}\right|=O\left(h^{3}\right)$ for $\|x\|=O\left(h^{6}\right)$, then $\left(\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} x=A^{-1}\left(I-\left(B A^{-1}\right)\left(I+B A^{-1}\right)^{-1}\right) x$ and we have also $\left|\left[\left(\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} x\right]_{i}-\left[\left(\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} x\right]_{i+1}\right|=O\left(h^{3}\right)$. The described elimination means that we replace $F(S)=0$ by $(I+E) F(S)=0, E$ being a diagonal matrix with entries of order $O(h)$. Thus, the matrix $M=I+E$ is suitable.

This completes the proof of Lemma 6.2.

### 6.4 Convergence estimates

In this section we establish in uniform norm the convergence rates of collocation method (6.6), (6.7) with linear/linear rational splines for boundary value problem (6.1), (6.2).

Let us remind, that in previous section we proved that the set $\tilde{K}$ contains a fixed point of the function $G$ which is also a solution of the basic system (6.8), (6.11), (6.12). Denote by $S$ here the linear/linear rational spline having as knot values this vector in $\tilde{K}$. Recall that $S_{*}$ is a special linear/linear rational spline interpolant to the solution $y$ of (6.1), (6.2). From [25] we know (see also Chapter 4), that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|S_{*}-y\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{3}\right) \tag{6.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|S_{*}^{\prime}-y^{\prime}\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{2}\right) \tag{6.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

Firstly, we determine $c_{0}$ for the convergence estimate. The constant $c_{0}$ is obtained from the estimate of $\left(\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1} \tilde{F}\left(S^{*}\right)$ where $\tilde{F}(S)=M F(S)$ with suitable matrix $M$. Suppose we divide (6.11) by $-h^{4} q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(\bar{y}_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}$ and (6.20) by $-h^{4} q\left(x_{i}\right)\left(y_{i}^{\prime}\right)^{2}$ which we include into the matrix $M$. Then the matrix $\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)$ has the diagonal dominance in rows with the difference 1 and, consequently, $\left\|\left(\tilde{F}^{\prime}\left(S^{*}\right)\right)^{-1}\right\| \leq 1$. Then, on the other hand, as $\varphi_{i}\left(S^{*}\right)=0$, by (6.20) the estimate of $\tilde{\psi}_{i}\left(S^{*}\right)$ reduces
to the estimate of $\psi_{i}\left(S^{*}\right)$ which, by (6.13), gives that

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{0}=\frac{1}{24} \max _{1 \leq i \leq n}\left|\frac{y^{I V}-p y^{\prime \prime \prime}-6 \frac{y^{\prime \prime \prime} y^{\prime \prime}}{y^{\prime}}+6 \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}}{\left(y^{\prime}\right)^{2}}+\frac{3}{2} p \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime}}}{q}\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right| . \tag{6.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that, instead of points $\xi_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$, we could use in determination of $c_{0}$ knots $x_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n-1$.

Before achieving in uniform norm the convergence rates, we need some auxiliary results. If we take $c=c_{0}+c_{1} h$ with sufficiently large $c_{1}>0$ then (6.22) holds. This means that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|S\left(x_{i}\right)-S_{*}\left(x_{i}\right)\right| \leq c_{0} h^{2}+o\left(h^{2}\right), i=1, \ldots, n-1 \tag{6.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|S\left(\xi_{i}\right)-S_{*}\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right| \leq c_{0} h^{2}+o\left(h^{2}\right), i=1, \ldots, n . \tag{6.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now from the estimate $\left|S\left(\xi_{i}\right)-y\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right| \leq\left|S\left(\xi_{i}\right)-S_{*}\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right|+\left|S_{*}\left(\xi_{i}\right)-y\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right|$ we get by (6.42) and (6.38)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|S\left(\xi_{i}\right)-y\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right| \leq c_{0} h^{2}+o\left(h^{2}\right) \tag{6.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 6.1. For the solution $S$ of the problem (6.6), (6.7) having the vector of values in $\tilde{K}$ it holds $\left\|S^{(k)}\right\|_{\infty}=\max _{1 \leq i \leq n} \max _{x_{i-1} \leq x \leq x_{i}}\left|S^{(k)}(x)\right| \leq C_{k}, k \geq 1$.

Proof. From (2.1) we obtain

$$
S^{(k)}(x)=\frac{(-1)^{k-1} k!c_{i} d_{i}^{k-1}}{\left(1+d_{i}\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)\right)^{k+1}}, x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]
$$

We indicated in Section 2.3 that $c_{i}$ and $d_{i}$ could be expressed via the spline values at $x_{i}$ and $\xi_{i}$. Namely,

$$
c_{i}=\frac{4\left(S_{i}-\bar{S}_{i}\right)\left(\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)}{h\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)}, \quad d_{i}=\frac{2\left(2 \bar{S}_{i}-S_{i-1}-S_{i}\right)}{h\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)} .
$$

Then, by (6.41), (6.42) and (6.38), we find that $c_{i}=1+O(h)$ and $d_{i}=O(1)$ which implies the assertion.

Next, we show the superconvergence of order $h^{2}$ for $S^{\prime \prime}$ in certain points.
From the equalities

$$
\left(S-S_{*}\right)\left(x_{i}\right)-\left(S-S_{*}\right)\left(\xi_{i}\right)=O\left(h^{3}\right)
$$

and

$$
\left(S-S_{*}\right)\left(x_{i-1}\right)-\left(S-S_{*}\right)\left(\xi_{i}\right)=O\left(h^{3}\right)
$$

we obtain

$$
\left(S^{\prime}-S_{*}^{\prime}\right)\left(\xi_{i}\right)=\frac{\left(S-S_{*}\right)\left(x_{i}\right)-\left(S-S_{*}\right)\left(x_{i-1}\right)}{h}+O\left(h^{2}\right)=O\left(h^{2}\right)
$$

Therefore, due to (6.39) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)-y^{\prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)=O\left(h^{2}\right) \tag{6.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (6.1) and (6.6)

$$
S^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)+p\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(S^{\prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)-y^{\prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right)+q\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(S\left(\xi_{i}\right)-y\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right)=0
$$

which, with the help of (6.43) and (6.44) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)=O\left(h^{2}\right) \tag{6.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

The Taylor expansion for $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$
$S^{\prime}(x)-y^{\prime}(x)=S^{\prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)-y^{\prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)+\left(S^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right)\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)+\frac{1}{2}\left(S^{\prime \prime \prime}-y^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)\left(\eta_{i}\right)\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)^{2}$ due to (6.44), (6.45) and Proposition 6.1 implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{a \leq x \leq b}\left|S^{\prime}(x)-y^{\prime}(x)\right|=O\left(h^{2}\right) . \tag{6.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

The expansion

$$
S^{\prime \prime}(x)-y^{\prime \prime}(x)=S^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime}\left(\xi_{i}\right)+\left(S^{\prime \prime \prime}-y^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)\left(\bar{\eta}_{i}\right)\left(x-\xi_{i}\right), x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right],
$$

(6.45) and Proposition 6.1 gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{a \leq x \leq b}\left|S^{\prime \prime}(x)-y^{\prime \prime}(x)\right|=O(h) \tag{6.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally, the expansion for $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$

$$
S(x)-y(x)=S\left(\xi_{i}\right)-y\left(\xi_{i}\right)+\left(S^{\prime}-y^{\prime}\right)\left(\zeta_{i}\right)\left(x-\xi_{i}\right)
$$

and (6.46) thanks to (6.43) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{a \leq x \leq b}|S(x)-y(x)| \leq c_{0} h^{2}+o\left(h^{2}\right) . \tag{6.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

We have proved as our main result in this chapter the following
Theorem 6.1. Let the solution $y \in C^{4}[a, b]$ of boundary value problem (6.1), (6.2) be strictly monotone. Then, for sufficiently small $h$, the collocation problem (6.6), (6.7) has a linear/linear rational spline $S$ as solution with convergence estimates (6.48) ( $c_{0}$ is determined in (6.40)), (6.46), (6.47) and (6.45). The rest term o $h^{2}$ ) in (6.48) is actually $O\left(h^{2+\alpha}\right)$ in the case $y^{I V} \in \operatorname{Lip} \alpha, 0<\alpha \leq 1$.

In collocation with quadratic splines, see, e.g., [39], it is known the estimate

$$
\|S-y\|_{\infty} \leq \frac{h^{2}}{24} \max _{1 \leq i \leq n}\left|\frac{y^{I V}-p y^{\prime \prime \prime}}{q}\left(\xi_{i}\right)\right|+o\left(h^{2}\right)
$$

Let us point out, that in comparison to (6.48), the additional members in $c_{0}$ could make the main part of the estimate for rational splines smaller or greater than in case of quadratic splines. In Chapter 8 there is a numerical example in which the rational splines have really considerably smaller error.

## Chapter 7

## Quadratic/linear rational spline collocation

Chapter 7 is dedicated to quadratic/linear rational spline collocation method. At first we introduce the method.

As in previous chapter we consider the differential equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
y^{\prime \prime}(x)+p(x) y^{\prime}(x)+q(x) y(x)=f(x), \quad x \in(a, b) \tag{7.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
y(a)=\alpha, \quad y(b)=\beta \tag{7.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose that the problem has a solution $y \in C^{4}[a, b]$. Let $p, q, f$ be continuous and $q(x) \leq q<0, x \in(a, b)$. Then the solution of problem (7.1), (7.2) is unique as we showed in Chapter 6.

### 7.1 Description of the spline collocation method

Let $a=x_{0}<x_{1}<\ldots<x_{n}=b$ be a uniform partition of the interval $[a, b]$ with knots $x_{i}=a+i h, i=0, \ldots, n, h=(b-a) / n, n \in \mathbb{N}$.

We use the quadratic/linear rational spline representation by spline values and first moments (Section 3.1). In this representation we have the notations $S\left(x_{i}\right)=S_{i}$ and $S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)=m_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n$.

In collocation we require the spline $S$ to satisfy the differential equation at points $x_{i}$ and the boundary conditions:

$$
\begin{align*}
& S^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)+p\left(x_{i}\right) S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)+q\left(x_{i}\right) S\left(x_{i}\right)=f\left(x_{i}\right), \quad i=0, \ldots, n  \tag{7.3}\\
& S(a)=\alpha, \quad S(b)=\beta \tag{7.4}
\end{align*}
$$

Internal equations (3.6) together with equations (7.3) and (7.4) form a nonlinear system with respect to the unknowns $S_{0}, \ldots, S_{n}, m_{0}, \ldots, m_{n}$.

Let us mention, that this collocation problem is similar to cubic spline case. The convergence rate $O\left(h^{2}\right)$ with adequate error estimate for cubic spline collocation method is known [39]. We will study such a problem in the case of quadratic/linear rational splines.

### 7.2 Transformation of the system

We start by transforming the system (3.6), (7.3), (7.4) to a more appropriate form.
Calculating $S^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)$ with the help of (3.5) at point $x_{i}$ on subinterval $\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{2\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2}}{h^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)}+p\left(x_{i}\right) m_{i}+q\left(x_{i}\right) S_{i}=f\left(x_{i}\right), i=1, \ldots, n \tag{7.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly, $S^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)$ calculated on subinterval $\left[x_{i}, x_{i+1}\right]$ gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{2\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right)^{2}}{h^{2}\left(h m_{i+1}-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\right)}+p\left(x_{i}\right) m_{i}+q\left(x_{i}\right) S_{i}=f\left(x_{i}\right), i=0, \ldots, n-1 \tag{7.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that if $y$ is the solution of (7.1) we may write for $i=0, \ldots, n$

$$
\begin{equation*}
y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)+p\left(x_{i}\right) y^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)+q\left(x_{i}\right) y\left(x_{i}\right)=f\left(x_{i}\right) . \tag{7.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us now subtract (7.7) from (7.5) and from (7.6), then multiply the results by $h^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)$ and by $h^{2}\left(h m_{i+1}-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\right)$, respectively. This gives

$$
\begin{align*}
2\left(h m_{i}\right. & \left.-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2}-h^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right) y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right) \\
& +h^{2} p\left(x_{i}\right)\left(m_{i}-y^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)  \tag{7.8}\\
& +h^{2} q\left(x_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-y\left(x_{i}\right)\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)=0, \quad i=1, \ldots, n
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
2\left(S_{i+1}\right. & \left.-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right)^{2}-h^{2}\left(h m_{i+1}-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\right) y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right) \\
& +h^{2} p\left(x_{i}\right)\left(m_{i}-y^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)\right)\left(h m_{i+1}-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\right)  \tag{7.9}\\
& +h^{2} q\left(x_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-y\left(x_{i}\right)\right)\left(h m_{i+1}-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\right)=0, \quad i=0, \ldots, n-1
\end{align*}
$$

Adding the last two equations for $i=1, \ldots, n-1$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi_{i}\left(S_{i-1},\right. & \left.m_{i-1}, S_{i}, m_{i}, S_{i+1}, m_{i+1}\right) \\
= & 2\left(\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2}+\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}+h m_{i}\right)^{2}\right) \\
& -h^{2}\left(h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i-1}\right)-\left(S_{i+1}-2 S_{i}+S_{i-1}\right)\right) y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)  \tag{7.10}\\
& +h^{2} p\left(x_{i}\right)\left(m_{i}-y^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)\right)\left(h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i-1}\right)-\left(S_{i+1}-2 S_{i}+S_{i-1}\right)\right) \\
& +h^{2} q\left(x_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-y\left(x_{i}\right)\right)\left(h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i-1}\right)-\left(S_{i+1}-2 S_{i}+S_{i-1}\right)\right)=0
\end{align*}
$$

where we introduce the functions $\psi_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n-1$.
We also introduce the functions $\varphi_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n-1$, and write the equations (3.6) in the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
\varphi_{i}\left(S_{i-1}, m_{i-1}, S_{i}, m_{i}, S_{i+1}, m_{i+1}\right)=\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2}\left(h m_{i+1}-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\right) \\
-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right)^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)=0 \tag{7.11}
\end{gather*}
$$

We write the boundary conditions (7.4) (with the help of notations $\psi_{0}$ and $\psi_{n}$ for the left side of equations) as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{0}\left(S_{0}\right)=h^{2}\left(S_{0}-\alpha\right)=0, \quad \psi_{n}\left(S_{n}\right)=h^{2}\left(S_{n}-\beta\right)=0 \tag{7.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us define the function $\tilde{\varphi}_{0}$ by (7.9) in the case of $i=0$ and $\tilde{\varphi}_{n}$ by (7.8) in the case of $i=n$. More precisely,

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{\varphi}_{0}\left(S_{0}, m_{0}, S_{1}, m_{1}\right)= & 2\left(S_{1}-S_{0}-h m_{0}\right)^{2}-h^{2}\left(h m_{1}-\left(S_{1}-S_{0}\right)\right) y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{0}\right) \\
& +h^{2} p\left(x_{0}\right)\left(m_{0}-y^{\prime}\left(x_{0}\right)\right)\left(h m_{1}-\left(S_{1}-S_{0}\right)\right)  \tag{7.13}\\
& +h^{2} q\left(x_{0}\right)\left(S_{0}-y\left(x_{0}\right)\right)\left(h m_{1}-\left(S_{1}-S_{0}\right)\right)=0
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{\varphi}_{n}\left(S_{n-1}, m_{n-1}, S_{n}, m_{n}\right)= & 2\left(h m_{n}-\left(S_{n}-S_{n-1}\right)\right)^{2}-h^{2}\left(S_{n}-S_{n-1}-h m_{n-1}\right) y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{n}\right) \\
& +h^{2} p\left(x_{n}\right)\left(m_{n}-y^{\prime}\left(x_{n}\right)\right)\left(S_{n}-S_{n-1}-h m_{n-1}\right)  \tag{7.14}\\
& +h^{2} q\left(x_{n}\right)\left(S_{n}-y\left(x_{n}\right)\right)\left(S_{n}-S_{n-1}-h m_{n-1}\right)=0 .
\end{align*}
$$

Define also $\tilde{\varphi}_{1}$ by (7.8) in the case $i=1$ and similarly $\tilde{\varphi}_{n-1}$ by (7.9) in the case of $i=n-1$, i.e.,

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{\varphi}_{1}\left(S_{0}, m_{0}, S_{1}, m_{1}\right)= & 2\left(h m_{1}-\left(S_{1}-S_{0}\right)\right)^{2}-h^{2}\left(S_{1}-S_{0}-h m_{0}\right) y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{1}\right) \\
& +h^{2} p\left(x_{1}\right)\left(m_{1}-y^{\prime}\left(x_{1}\right)\right)\left(S_{1}-S_{0}-h m_{0}\right)  \tag{7.15}\\
& +h^{2} q\left(x_{1}\right)\left(S_{1}-y_{1}\right)\left(S_{1}-S_{0}-h m_{0}\right)=0
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
& \tilde{\varphi}_{n-1}\left(S_{n-1}, m_{n-1},\right. \\
& \left., S_{n}, m_{n}\right)= \\
& \qquad \begin{array}{l}
2\left(S_{n}-S_{n-1}-h m_{n-1}\right)^{2}-h^{2}\left(h m_{n}-\left(S_{n}-S_{n-1}\right)\right) y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{n-1}\right) \\
\\
+h^{2} p\left(x_{n-1}\right)\left(m_{n-1}-y^{\prime}\left(x_{n-1}\right)\right)\left(h m_{n}-\left(S_{n}-S_{n-1}\right)\right) \\
\\
+h^{2} q\left(x_{n-1}\right)\left(S_{n-1}-y\left(x_{n-1}\right)\right)\left(h m_{n}-\left(S_{n}-S_{n-1}\right)\right)=0 .
\end{array} \tag{7.16}
\end{align*}
$$

Then define $\varphi_{0}=\tilde{\varphi}_{0}-\tilde{\varphi}_{1}$ and $\varphi_{n}=\tilde{\varphi}_{n}-\tilde{\varphi}_{n-1}$.
Denote $S=\left(S_{0}, \ldots, S_{n}\right)$ and $m=\left(m_{0}, \ldots, m_{n}\right)$. Let us point out, that although we denote by $S$ a spline and the vector of its knot values, from the context it is clear which object we deal with. Now the collocation equations (7.10), internal equations (7.11), boundary equations (7.12), equations $\varphi_{0}(S, m)=0$ and $\varphi_{n}(S, m)=0$ together form a system $\Phi(S, m)=0$ and $\Psi(S, m)=0$ with functions $\Phi: \mathbb{R}^{2 n+2} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n+1}$ and $\Psi: \mathbb{R}^{2 n+2} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n+1}$, where $\Phi(S, m)=\left(\varphi_{0}(S, m), \ldots, \varphi_{n}(S, m)\right)$ and $\Psi(S, m)=\left(\psi_{0}(S, m), \ldots, \psi_{n}(S, m)\right)$ (here and in the sequel we allow the whole vector of spline knot values $S$ and derivative values $m$ in $\varphi_{i}(S, m)$ and $\psi_{i}(S, m)$ instead of some particular components as in (7.10)-(7.16)). The system $\Phi(S, m)=0, \Psi(S, m)=0$ will be considered as basic system and it contains all the requirements on spline values and its derivatives. Our aim is to show that this system has an appropriate solution and obtain the convergence results.

In order to establish our results we have to use the quadratic/linear rational spline interpolant $S$ satisfying (5.1) and (5.25) for the solution $y$ of problem (7.1), (7.2). Denote this special interpolant by $S_{*}$. Define its vector of values by $S^{*}=\left(S_{*}\left(x_{0}\right), \ldots, S_{*}\left(x_{n}\right)\right) \in \mathbb{R}^{n+1}$ and let $m^{*}=\left(S_{*}^{\prime}\left(x_{0}\right), \ldots, S_{*}^{\prime}\left(x_{n}\right)\right) \in \mathbb{R}^{n+1}$. It occurs that around the vector ( $S^{*}, m^{*}$ ) we succeed in finding a set with sufficiently small size containing the vector of values and derivatives of approximate solution. We know that $S_{i}^{*}=y_{i}$ and $m_{i}^{*}-y_{i}^{\prime}=o\left(h^{3}\right)([26]$ or see Chapter 5). If $y \in \operatorname{Lip} \alpha$, $0<\alpha \leq 1$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
m_{i}^{*}-y_{i}^{\prime}=O\left(h^{3+\alpha}\right) \tag{7.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

We transform the basic system to an equivalent form and then carry out an analysis.

### 7.3 Estimate of the error of approximate solution

In this section we estimate the error in the case of the solution of basic system.
The Taylor expansion of $\Psi(S, m)$ at point $\left(S^{*}, m\right)$ gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi(S, m)=\Psi\left(S^{*}, m\right)+\Psi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Psi_{S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2} \tag{7.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we use the notation $\Psi_{S}(S, m)=\left(\psi_{0 S}(S, m), \ldots, \psi_{n S}(S, m)\right)$, and, in turn, with the components $\psi_{i S}(S, m)=\left(\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{0}}(S, m), \ldots, \frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{n}}(S, m)\right)$, but any component $\psi_{i S S}$ of $\Psi_{S S}$ is a matrix consisting of second order partial derivatives by variables $S_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n$. If the matrix $\Psi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)$ is invertible then due to (7.18) the equation $\Psi(S, m)=0$ is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
S-S^{*}=-\Psi_{S}^{-1}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\left(\Psi\left(S^{*}, m\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Psi_{S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}\right) \tag{7.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose that

$$
\begin{gather*}
S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}=O\left(h^{2}\right), i=1, \ldots, n-1  \tag{7.20}\\
\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)-2\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)+\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right)=O\left(h^{4}\right), i=1, \ldots, n-1  \tag{7.21}\\
2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)=O\left(h^{5}\right), i=1, \ldots, n-1,  \tag{7.22}\\
h\left(m_{0}-m_{0}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{1}-S_{1}^{*}\right)=O\left(h^{4}\right)  \tag{7.23}\\
h\left(m_{n}-m_{n}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{n-1}-S_{n-1}^{*}\right)=O\left(h^{4}\right) \tag{7.24}
\end{gather*}
$$

In those assumptions, in the case of sufficiently small $h$, the basic system has a solution which we will show later. Thus, in estimation of the error we may use (7.20)-(7.24).

Let us add that in those assumptions also, for $i=1, \ldots, n-1$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)\right)=O\left(h^{4}\right),  \tag{7.25}\\
& h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)=O\left(h^{4}\right) \tag{7.26}
\end{align*}
$$

where (7.25) is obtained by subtracting (7.21) from (7.22) and (7.26) comes by adding (7.21) and (7.22).

Let us assume without loss of generality that $y^{\prime \prime}(x)>0, x \in[a, b]$ (see Introduction) (in the case $y^{\prime \prime}(x)<0, x \in[a, b]$, the changes in the following text are obvious).

The main problem in (7.19) is the study of interior equations with indices $i=1, \ldots, n-1$. Let us start with the study of $\Psi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)$. As before, let $y_{i}=y\left(x_{i}\right)$, $i=0, \ldots, n$, similar notation will be used in the case of derivatives and other functions.

From (7.10) we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}= & 4\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)+h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right)-h^{2} q_{i}\left(S_{i}-y_{i}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}= & -4\left(S_{i+1}-2 S_{i}+S_{i-1}\right)-2 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+2 h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right)+2 h^{2} q_{i}\left(S_{i}-y_{i}\right) \\
& +h^{2} q_{i}\left(h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i-1}\right)-\left(S_{i+1}-2 S_{i}+S_{i-1}\right)\right),  \tag{7.27}\\
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}= & 4\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right)+h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right)-h^{2} q_{i}\left(S_{i}-y_{i}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

With the help of the following Taylor expansions

$$
\begin{align*}
S_{i-1}^{*} & =y_{i}-h y_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right) \\
S_{i+1}^{*} & =y_{i}+h y_{i}^{\prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right)  \tag{7.28}\\
m_{i}^{*} & =y_{i}^{\prime}-h y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{h^{2}}{6} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{3}\right) \\
m_{i+1}^{*} & =y_{i}^{\prime}+h y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{2}}{6} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{3}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

we can calculate

$$
\begin{align*}
h m_{i}^{*}-\left(S_{i}^{*}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right) & =\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
h m_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-S_{i}^{*}\right) & =\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{8} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right),  \tag{7.29}\\
S_{i}^{*}-S_{i-1}^{*}-h m_{i-1}^{*} & =\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{8} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
S_{i+1}^{*}-S_{i}^{*}-h m_{i}^{*} & =\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

and then

$$
\begin{align*}
& h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i-1}\right)-\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-2 S_{i}^{*}+S_{i-1}^{*}\right) \\
& =h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)+h\left(m_{i+1}^{*}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-2 S_{i}^{*}+S_{i-1}^{*}\right) \\
& =h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)+h m_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-S_{i}^{*}\right)+\left(S_{i}^{*}-S_{i-1}^{*}-h m_{i-1}^{*}\right) \\
& =h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{1}{4} h^{4} y_{i}^{I V}+h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)+o\left(h^{4}\right) \tag{7.30}
\end{align*}
$$

We get from (7.27) due to (7.29) and (7.30)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}, m\right)= & 4\left(h m_{i}^{*}-\left(S_{i}^{*}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)+4 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)+h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} \\
& -h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right)-h^{2} q_{i}\left(S_{i}^{*}-y_{i}\right) \\
= & 3 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{2}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{6} y_{i}^{I V}+4 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)-h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right)+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}, m\right)= & -4\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-2 S_{i}^{*}+S_{i-1}^{*}\right)-2 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+2 h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right) \\
& +2 h^{2} q_{i}\left(S_{i}^{*}-y_{i}\right)+h^{2} q_{i}\left(h\left(m_{i+1}^{*}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-2 S_{i}^{*}+S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right) \\
& +h^{2} q_{i}\left(h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right) \\
= & -6 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{4}}{3} y_{i}^{I V}+h^{4} q_{i} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+2 h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right) \\
& +h^{2} q_{i}\left(h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}, m\right)= & 4\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-S_{i}^{*}-h m_{i}^{*}\right)-4 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)+h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} \\
& -h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right)-h^{2} q_{i}\left(S_{i}^{*}-y_{i}\right) \\
= & 3 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{2}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{6} y_{i}^{I V}-4 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)-h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right)+o\left(h^{4}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that in the case of $m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}=O\left(h^{2}\right)$ and due to (7.17) we have for small $h$ the diagonal dominance in rows, namely

$$
\left|\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\right|-\left|\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\right|-\left|\frac{\partial \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\right|=-h^{4} q_{i} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+o\left(h^{4}\right)
$$

In addition, for $\psi_{0}$ and $\psi_{n}$ we have the diagonal dominance in rows as well. This implies the invertibility of $\Psi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)$.

Now, let us proceed with the study of $\Psi\left(S^{*}, m\right)$. With the help of the first equality of (7.29) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}^{*}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)=h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)+\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right) \tag{7.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the last one from (7.29) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{i+1}^{*}-S_{i}^{*}-h m_{i}=-h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)+\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right) \tag{7.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then (7.28) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{i+1}^{*}-2 S_{i}^{*}+S_{i-1}^{*}=h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{12} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right) \tag{7.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

Due to (7.30), (7.31) and (7.32) by direct calculations we have (7.10) as

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi_{i}\left(S^{*}, m\right)= & \frac{1}{9} h^{6}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{h^{6}}{12} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{I V}+4 h^{2}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)^{2} \\
& -\frac{4}{3} h^{4} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)-h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right) \\
& +h^{4} p_{i} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)+o\left(h^{6}\right) \tag{7.34}
\end{align*}
$$

Next, we are interested in the components of $\Psi_{S S}$. From (7.27) we get the second derivatives

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}^{2}}=4, \quad \frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1} \partial S_{i}}=-4-h^{2} q_{i}, \quad \frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1} \partial S_{i+1}}=0, \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i} \partial S_{i-1}}=-4-h^{2} q_{i}, \quad \frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}^{2}}=8+4 h^{2} q_{i}, \quad \frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i} \partial S_{i+1}}=-4-h^{2} q_{i}, \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1} \partial S_{i-1}}=0, \quad \frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1} \partial S_{i}}=-4-h^{2} q_{i}, \quad \frac{\partial^{2} \psi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}^{2}}=4 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{1}{2} \psi_{i S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}= & 2\left(\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)\right)^{2}+2\left(\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right)\right)^{2} \\
& -h^{2} q_{i}\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)\left(\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)-2\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)+\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and taking into account (7.20) and (7.21) then

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{1}{2} \psi_{i S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}= & 2\left(\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)\right)^{2} \\
& +2\left(\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right)\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{8}\right) \tag{7.35}
\end{align*}
$$

Let us now study $\Psi\left(S^{*}, m\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Psi_{S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}$. Observe that basing on (7.25)
and (7.26) we can write

$$
\begin{aligned}
4 h^{2}\left(m_{i}\right. & \left.-m_{i}^{*}\right)^{2}+2\left(\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)^{2}+2\left(\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)\right)^{2} \\
& -4 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)+\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right) \\
& +4 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right) \\
= & 2\left(h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)\right)\right)^{2} \\
& +2\left(h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)\right)^{2} \\
& 4 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right) \\
= & 4 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)+O\left(h^{8}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

This with (7.34) and (7.35) leads to

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi_{i}\left(S^{*}, m\right) & +\frac{1}{2} \psi_{i S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}=\frac{h^{6}}{12}\left(\frac{4}{3}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}-y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{I V}\right)  \tag{7.36}\\
& -h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)-\frac{4}{3} h^{4} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right) \\
& +h^{4} p_{i} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)+4 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)+o\left(h^{6}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Replacing $2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)$ in (7.36) by $S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right)$ and due to (7.22) we see that (7.36) reduces to

$$
\begin{align*}
& \psi_{i}\left(S^{*}, m\right)+\frac{1}{2} \psi_{i S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2} \\
& =\frac{h^{6}}{12}\left(\frac{4}{3}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}-y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{I V}\right)-h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right) \\
& +\left(-\frac{2}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{2} p_{i} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+2\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right) \\
& +o\left(h^{6}\right) \tag{7.37}
\end{align*}
$$

Consider now (7.19) in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)=-\left(\Psi\left(S^{*}, m\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Psi_{S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}\right) \tag{7.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

For the definiteness, let us assume that $y^{I V}, p, q \in \operatorname{Lip} 1$ (if only $y^{I V}, p, q \in C[a, b]$, the obvious appropriate changes should be made in the text). We have already
studied $\Psi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)$ and $\Psi\left(S^{*}, m\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Psi_{S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}$. Now (7.38) has the matrix form $A\left(S-S^{*}\right)=b$, where we take the components

$$
\left(-\frac{2}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{2} p_{i} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+2\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)
$$

(coming from (7.37)) to the left hand side. Then

$$
\begin{align*}
a_{i, i-1} & =3 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{1}{6} h^{4} y_{i}^{I V}-h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right) \\
a_{i, i} & =-6 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{1}{3} h^{4} y_{i}^{I V}+2 h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right)+h^{4} q_{i} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right),  \tag{7.39}\\
a_{i, i+1} & =3 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{1}{6} h^{4} y_{i}^{I V}-h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
b_{i}=\frac{h^{6}}{12}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{I V}-\frac{4}{3}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right)+h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)+O\left(h^{7}\right) \tag{7.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the matrix $A$, in interior rows for $1, \ldots, n-1$, we observe the diagonal dominance in rows with the difference $-h^{4} q_{i} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right)$.

Denote for brevity $u_{i}=S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}, v_{i}=2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right), i=0, \ldots, n$, and $w_{i}=2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right), i=1, \ldots, n-1$. Then $w_{i}=v_{i}-\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right)$ and $v_{i}=w_{i}+\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right), i=1, \ldots, n-1$. Later we need also $w_{0}=v_{0}-2 u_{1}$ and $w_{n}=v_{n}-2 u_{n-1}$. Now we can write the interior equations of $A\left(S-S^{*}\right)=b$ as

$$
\begin{align*}
& \quad\left(3 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\alpha_{i}\right) u_{i-1}-\left(6 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+2 \alpha_{i}-h^{4} q_{i} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right) u_{i}+\left(3 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\alpha_{i}\right) u_{i+1} \\
& =\frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(u_{i+2}-2 u_{i+1}+u_{i}\right)+h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(u_{i+1}-2 u_{i}+u_{i-1}\right)  \tag{7.41}\\
& \\
& +\frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(u_{i}-2 u_{i-1}+u_{i-2}\right)+c_{i} h^{6}+\frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(w_{i+1}-w_{i-1}\right)+O\left(h^{7}\right) \\
& \text { where } \alpha_{i}=\frac{1}{6} h^{4} y_{i}^{I V}-h^{2} p_{i}\left(m_{i}-y_{i}^{\prime}\right) \text { and } c_{i}=\frac{1}{12}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{I V}-\frac{4}{3}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Taking $h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(u_{i+1}-2 u_{i}+u_{i-1}\right)$ to the left hand side of the equation, we get therein

$$
\left(2 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\alpha_{i}\right) u_{i-1}-\left(4 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+2 \alpha_{i}-h^{4} q_{i} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right) u_{i}+\left(2 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\alpha_{i}\right) u_{i+1}
$$

or

$$
\left(2 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\alpha_{i}\right)\left(u_{i-1}-\left(2-h^{2} q_{i}\right) u_{i}+u_{i+1}\right)
$$

Now we can write (7.41) for $i=2, \ldots, n-2$ as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(2 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\alpha_{i}\right)\left(u_{i-1}-\left(2-h^{2} q_{i}\right) u_{i}+u_{i+1}\right) \\
& =\frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(\left(u_{i}-\left(2-h^{2} q_{i+1}\right) u_{i+1}+u_{i+2}\right)+\left(u_{i-2}-\left(2-h^{2} q_{i-1}\right) u_{i-1}+u_{i}\right)\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(h^{2} q_{i-1} u_{i-1}-2 h^{2} q_{i} u_{i}+h^{2} q_{i+1} u_{i+1}\right)+c_{i} h^{6}+\frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(w_{i+1}-w_{i-1}\right)+O\left(h^{7}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Dividing the last equation by $h^{2} q_{i} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}$ and denoting $z_{i}=u_{i-1}-\left(2-h^{2} q_{i}\right) u_{i}+u_{i+1}$, $i=1, \ldots, n-1$, we have

$$
-\frac{1}{2} \frac{z_{i-1}}{q_{i}}+\left(2+\tilde{\alpha}_{i}\right) \frac{z_{i}}{q_{i}}-\frac{1}{2} \frac{z_{i+1}}{q_{i}}=\tilde{c}_{i} h^{4}+O\left(h^{5}\right)
$$

with $\tilde{\alpha}_{i}=O(h)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{c}_{i}=\frac{1}{12} \frac{y_{i}^{I V}-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}}{q_{i}} \tag{7.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that, e.g., $\frac{z_{i-1}}{q_{i}}=\frac{q_{i-1}}{q_{i}} \frac{z_{i-1}}{q_{i-1}}=\left(1+\frac{q_{i-1}-q_{i}}{q_{i}}\right) \frac{z_{i-1}}{q_{i-1}}=(1+O(h)) \frac{z_{i-1}}{q_{i-1}}$ which gives for $i=2, \ldots, n-2$

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{1}{2}(1+O(h)) \frac{z_{i-1}}{q_{i-1}}+\left(2+\tilde{\alpha}_{i}\right) \frac{z_{i}}{q_{i}}-\frac{1}{2}(1+O(h)) \frac{z_{i+1}}{q_{i+1}}=\tilde{c}_{i} h^{4}+O\left(h^{5}\right) . \tag{7.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark. Dividing the interior equations for $i=1, \ldots, n-1$ of the system $A\left(S-S^{*}\right)=b$ by $-3 h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}$, first and last equations by $h^{2}$, we obtain a system $\tilde{A}\left(S-S^{*}\right)=\tilde{b}$ with the matrix $\tilde{A}$ where its entries are as in (6.24) for $i=1, \ldots, n-1$. Basing on the proof of Lemma 6.2 , we have for $\tilde{A}^{-1}=\left(a_{i j}\right)$ that $\left|a_{i j}-a_{i+1, j}\right|=O(1)$. This implies for the solution $(S, m)$ of the basic system

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)=O\left(h^{3}\right), \quad i=1, \ldots, n \tag{7.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

Next, we will focus our attention to the study of $\tilde{\varphi}_{0}(S, m)$. Using the Taylor expansion at point $\left(S, m^{*}\right)$ we have

$$
\tilde{\varphi}_{0}(S, m)=\tilde{\varphi}_{0}\left(S, m^{*}\right)+\tilde{\varphi}_{0 m}\left(S, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0 m m}\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}
$$

and therefore, by the following Taylor expansions at $\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \tilde{\varphi}_{0}\left(S, m^{*}\right)=\tilde{\varphi}_{0}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)+\tilde{\varphi}_{0 S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0 S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2} \\
& \tilde{\varphi}_{0 m}\left(S, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)=\tilde{\varphi}_{0 m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)+\tilde{\varphi}_{0 m S}\left(m-m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

the equation $\tilde{\varphi}_{0}(S, m)=0$ is equivalent to

$$
\begin{align*}
& -\tilde{\varphi}_{0 m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)-\tilde{\varphi}_{0 S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)  \tag{7.45}\\
& =\tilde{\varphi}_{0}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0 S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}+\tilde{\varphi}_{0 m S}\left(m-m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0 m m}\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}
\end{align*}
$$

From (7.13) we calculate

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial S_{0}}=-4\left(S_{1}-S_{0}-h m_{0}\right)-h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+h^{2} p_{0}\left(m_{0}-y_{0}^{\prime}\right) \\
& \frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial S_{1}}=4\left(S_{1}-S_{0}-h m_{0}\right)+h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}-h^{2} p_{0}\left(m_{0}-y_{0}^{\prime}\right) \\
& \frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial m_{0}}=-4 h\left(S_{1}-S_{0}-h m_{0}\right)+h^{2} p_{0}\left(h m_{1}-\left(S_{1}-S_{0}\right)\right) \\
& \frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial m_{1}}=-h^{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+h^{3} p_{0}\left(m_{0}-y_{0}^{\prime}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and then

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial S_{0}^{2}}=4, & \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial S_{0} \partial S_{1}}=-4, \\
\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial S_{1} \partial S_{0}}=-4, & \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial S_{1}^{2}}=4, \\
\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial m_{0} \partial S_{0}}=4 h+h^{2} p_{0}, & \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial m_{0} \partial S_{1}}=-4 h-h^{2} p_{0}, \\
\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial m_{1} \partial S_{0}}=0, & \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial m_{1} \partial S_{1}}=0, \\
\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial m_{0}^{2}}=4 h^{2}, & \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial m_{0} \partial m_{1}}=h^{3} p_{0}, \\
\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial m_{1} \partial m_{0}}=h^{3} p_{0}, & \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{0}}{\partial m_{1}^{2}}=0 .
\end{array}
$$

Thus, using obtained partial derivatives, (7.13) and (7.28) by direct calculations
we have (7.45) as

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(2 h^{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+\right. & \left.\frac{2}{3} h^{4} y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{h^{4}}{2} p_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right)\right)\left(m_{0}-m_{0}^{*}\right)+\left(h^{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+o\left(h^{5}\right)\right)\left(m_{1}-m_{1}^{*}\right) \\
& -\left(3 h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{2}{3} h^{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{6} y_{0}^{I V}+O\left(h^{5}\right)\right)\left(S_{1}-S_{1}^{*}\right)  \tag{7.46}\\
= & -\frac{h^{6}}{24}\left(y_{0}^{\prime \prime} y_{0}^{I V}-\frac{4}{3}\left(y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right)+2\left(S_{1}-S_{1}^{*}\right)^{2}+2 h^{2}\left(m_{0}-m_{0}^{*}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{7}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Recall that $u_{1}=S_{1}-S_{1}^{*}, v_{0}=2 h\left(m_{0}-m_{0}^{*}\right), w_{0}=v_{0}-2 u_{1}, v_{1}=2 h\left(m_{1}-m_{1}^{*}\right)$ and $w_{1}=v_{1}-2 u_{2}$ with the property $u_{2}-2 u_{1}=O\left(h^{4}\right)$. Then we have $\frac{h^{3}}{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(v_{0}-2 u_{1}\right)=\frac{h^{3}}{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime} w_{0}=O\left(h^{7}\right)$ and we can write (7.46) as

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{4} p_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right)\right) v_{0}+\frac{1}{2}\left(h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+o\left(h^{5}\right)\right) v_{1} \\
& \quad-\left(3 h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right)\right) u_{1}=-C_{0}+2 u_{1}^{2}+\frac{1}{2} v_{0}^{2}+O\left(h^{7}\right) \tag{7.47}
\end{align*}
$$

where $C_{0}=\frac{h^{6}}{24}\left(y_{0}^{\prime \prime} y_{0}^{I V}-\frac{4}{3}\left(y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right)$.
Note that it holds $\frac{1}{2} v_{0}^{2}=2 u_{1}^{2}+O\left(h^{7}\right)$. Thus, altogether

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{4} p_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{3}\right)\right) v_{0}+\frac{1}{2}\left(h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{3}\right)\right) v_{1}- & \left(3 h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{3}\right)\right) u_{1} \\
& =-C_{0}+O\left(h^{7}\right) \tag{7.48}
\end{align*}
$$

Next, we are interested in $\tilde{\varphi}_{1}(S, m)$. From (7.15) we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial S_{0}}= & 4\left(h m_{1}-\left(S_{1}-S_{0}\right)\right)+h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}-h^{2} p_{1}\left(m_{1}-y_{1}^{\prime}\right)-h^{2} q_{1}\left(S_{1}-y_{1}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial S_{1}}= & -4\left(h m_{1}-\left(S_{1}-S_{0}\right)\right)-h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}+h^{2} p_{1}\left(m_{1}-y_{1}^{\prime}\right)+h^{2} q_{1}\left(S_{1}-y_{1}\right) \\
& +h^{2} q_{1}\left(S_{1}-S_{0}-h m_{0}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Then, by (7.17) and (7.29) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial S_{0}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=3 h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{7}{3} h^{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}+h^{4} y_{0}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right) \\
& \frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial S_{1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=-3 h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{7}{3} h^{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}-h^{4} y_{0}^{I V}+\frac{h^{4}}{2} q_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+o\left(h^{4}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Now we can calculate the second derivatives

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial S_{0}^{2}}=4, & \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial S_{0} \partial S_{1}}=-4-h^{2} q_{1} \\
\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial S_{1} \partial S_{0}}=-4-h^{2} q_{1}, & \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial S_{1}^{2}}=4+2 h^{2} q_{1}
\end{array}
$$

and by direct calculations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}_{1 S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}=4 u_{1}^{2}+O\left(h^{8}\right) \tag{7.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (7.15) we find also

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial m_{0}}=h^{3} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}-h^{3} p_{1}\left(m_{1}-y_{1}^{\prime}\right)-h^{3} q_{1}\left(S_{1}-y_{1}\right)  \tag{7.50}\\
& \frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial m_{1}}=4 h\left(h m_{1}-\left(S_{1}-S_{0}\right)\right)+h^{2} p_{1}\left(S_{1}-S_{0}-h m_{0}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

and then by using (7.17) and (7.29)

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial m_{0}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=h^{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+h^{4} y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right) \\
& \frac{\partial \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial m_{1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=2 h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{4}{3} h^{4} y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{2} p_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Partial derivatives (7.50) give

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial m_{0}^{2}}=0, & \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial m_{0} \partial m_{1}}=-h^{3} p_{1} \\
\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial m_{1} \partial m_{0}}=-h^{3} p_{1}, & \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial m_{1}^{2}}=4 h^{2}
\end{array}
$$

Now we can calculate

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}_{1 m m}\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}=4 h^{2}\left(m_{1}-m_{1}^{*}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{7}\right) \tag{7.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly we get from (7.50)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial m_{0} \partial S_{0}} & =0, & \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial m_{0} \partial S_{1}} & =-h^{3} q_{1} \\
\frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial m_{1} \partial S_{0}} & =4 h-h^{2} p_{1}, & \frac{\partial^{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1}}{\partial m_{1} \partial S_{1}} & =-4 h+h^{2} p_{1}
\end{aligned}
$$

and, thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}_{1 m S}\left(m-m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)=O\left(h^{7}\right) \tag{7.52}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also we calculate from (7.15) with the help of (7.29)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\varphi}_{1}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=-\frac{h^{6}}{24}\left(y_{0}^{\prime \prime} y_{0}^{I V}-\frac{4}{3}\left(y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right)+O\left(h^{7}\right) \tag{7.53}
\end{equation*}
$$

Due to Taylor expansion the equation $\tilde{\varphi}_{1}(S, m)=0$ is equivalent to

$$
\tilde{\varphi}_{1}\left(S, m^{*}\right)+\tilde{\varphi}_{1 m}\left(S, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1 m m}\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}=0
$$

which, with the help of expansions

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \tilde{\varphi}_{1}\left(S, m^{*}\right)=\tilde{\varphi}_{1}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)+\tilde{\varphi}_{1 S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1 S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2} \\
& \tilde{\varphi}_{1 m}\left(S, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)=\tilde{\varphi}_{1 m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)+\tilde{\varphi}_{1 m S}\left(m-m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
\tilde{\varphi}_{1 m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right) & +\tilde{\varphi}_{1 S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)=-\tilde{\varphi}_{1}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)-\frac{1}{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1 S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2} \\
& -\tilde{\varphi}_{1 m S}\left(m-m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)-\frac{1}{2} \tilde{\varphi}_{1 m m}\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

This can now be written as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(h^{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+h^{4} y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right. & \left.+O\left(h^{5}\right)\right)\left(m_{0}-m_{0}^{*}\right) \\
& +\left(2 h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{4}{3} h^{4} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{2} p_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right)\right)\left(m_{1}-m_{1}^{*}\right) \\
& -\left(3 h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{7}{3} h^{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}+h^{4} y_{0}^{I V}+\frac{h^{4}}{2} q_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+o\left(h^{4}\right)\right)\left(S_{1}-S_{1}^{*}\right) \\
= & \frac{h^{6}}{24}\left(y_{0}^{\prime \prime} y_{0}^{I V}-\frac{4}{3}\left(y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right)-2 u_{1}^{2}-2 h^{2}\left(m_{1}-m_{1}^{*}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{7}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

or

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{1}{2}\left(h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+h^{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right) v_{0}+\left(h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{2}{3} h^{4} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{4} p_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right) v_{1} \\
& \quad-\left(3 h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{7}{3} h^{3} y_{0}^{\prime \prime \prime}+h^{4} y_{0}^{I V}+\frac{h^{4}}{2} q_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right)\right) u_{1} \\
& \quad=C_{0}-2 u_{1}^{2}-2 u_{1}^{2}+O\left(h^{7}\right) \tag{7.54}
\end{align*}
$$

where $C_{0}$ is defined in (7.47).
Note that $\frac{1}{2} v_{0}+\frac{2}{3} v_{1}-\frac{7}{3} u_{1}=O\left(h^{4}\right),-\frac{h^{3}}{4} p_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime} v_{0}=-\frac{h^{4}}{4} p_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime} v_{1}+O\left(h^{7}\right)$ and $-\frac{h^{2}}{2} q_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime} u_{1}=-\frac{h^{4}}{4} q_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime} v_{0}+O\left(h^{8}\right)$. Therefore, if we add (7.47) and (7.54) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{3}{2} h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{4}}{4} q_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}\right) v_{0}+\frac{3}{2} h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime} v_{1}-6 h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime} u_{1}=O\left(h^{7}\right) \tag{7.55}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observe here the diagonal dominance in rows with the difference $-\frac{h^{4}}{4} q_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}$. Let us point out that we use this equation later as equation $\left[B\left(m-m^{*}\right)\right]_{0}=d_{0}(S, m)$.

Also, for $i=1$, equation (7.41) is

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(3 h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}+\alpha_{1}\right) u_{0}-\left(6 h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}+2 \alpha_{1}-h^{4} q_{1} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\right) u_{1}+\left(3 h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}+\alpha_{1}\right) u_{2} \\
& =c_{1} h^{6}+h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\left(h\left(m_{2}-m_{2}^{*}\right)-h\left(m_{0}-m_{0}^{*}\right)\right)+O\left(h^{7}\right) \tag{7.56}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\alpha_{1}=\frac{1}{6} h^{4} y_{1}^{I V}-h^{2} p_{1}\left(m_{1}-y_{1}^{\prime}\right)$ and $c_{1}=\frac{1}{12}\left(y_{1}^{\prime \prime} y_{1}^{I V}-\frac{4}{3}\left(y_{1}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}\right)$.
Basing on (7.48) and using again the notations $w_{i}, u_{i}, i=0, \ldots, 3$, we transform the right hand side of (7.56) as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& c_{1} h^{6}+\frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime} \tilde{c}_{0}+\frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\left(w_{2}+\frac{1}{2} w_{1}+u_{3}-u_{1}+\frac{1}{2} u_{2}-3 u_{1}\right)+O\left(h^{7}\right) \\
& =\frac{5}{4} c_{1} h^{6}+\frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\left(w_{2}+\frac{1}{2} w_{1}\right)+\frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\left(u_{3}-2 u_{2}+u_{1}\right)+h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\left(u_{2}-2 u_{1}+u_{0}\right) \\
& \quad+\frac{1}{4} h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\left(u_{2}-2 u_{1}\right)+O\left(h^{7}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\tilde{c}_{0}=\frac{C_{0}}{h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}}$. Next we move $h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\left(u_{2}-2 u_{1}+u_{0}\right)$ to the left hand side. Then we are able to write (7.56) (taking into account that $u_{0}=0$ ) as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\left(4 h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}+2 \alpha_{1}-h^{4} q_{1} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\right) u_{1}+\left(2 h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}+\alpha_{1}\right) u_{2} \\
& \quad=\frac{5}{4} c_{1} h^{6}+\frac{1}{2} h^{2}\left(u_{3}-2 u_{2}+u_{1}\right)+\frac{1}{4} h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\left(u_{2}-2 u_{1}\right)+O\left(h^{7}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

or

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(2 h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\right. & \left.+\alpha_{1}\right)\left(u_{0}-\left(2-h^{2} q_{1}\right) u_{1}+u_{2}\right)=\frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\left(u_{1}-\left(2-h^{2} q_{2}\right) u_{2}+u_{3}\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{4} h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\left(u_{2}-\left(2-h^{2} q_{1}\right) u_{1}\right)+\frac{5}{4} c_{1} h^{6}+h^{4} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}\left(q_{1} u_{1}-\frac{1}{2} q_{2} u_{2}\right)+O\left(h^{7}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

which with the help of notation $z_{i}=u_{i-1}-\left(2-q_{i} h^{2}\right) u_{i}+u_{i+1}, i=1,2$, gives

$$
\left(\frac{7}{4} h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}+\alpha_{1}\right) z_{1}-\frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{1}^{\prime \prime} z_{2}=\frac{5}{4} c_{1} h^{6} .
$$

Divide the last equation by $\frac{5}{4} h^{2} q_{1} y_{1}^{\prime \prime}$, then, because of $\frac{z_{2}}{q_{1}}=(1+O(h)) \frac{z_{2}}{q_{2}}$, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{7}{5}+O(h)\right) \frac{z_{1}}{q_{1}}-\frac{2}{5}(1+O(h)) \frac{z_{2}}{q_{2}}=\tilde{c}_{1} h^{4} \tag{7.57}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\tilde{c}_{1}$ has the same meaning as was for $i=2, \ldots, n-2$.
Due to the diagonal dominance in rows with the difference $1+O(h)$ in the system consisting in (7.43), (7.57) and the counterpart of (7.57) for $i=n-1$, it holds

$$
\left|\frac{z_{i}}{q_{i}}\right| \leq \max _{1 \leq i \leq n-1}\left|\tilde{c}_{i} h^{4}\right|+O\left(h^{5}\right)
$$

Now

$$
u_{i-1}-\left(2-h^{2} q_{i}\right) u_{i}+u_{i+1}=z_{i}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{q_{i}} u_{i-1}-\left(\frac{2}{q_{i}}-h^{2}\right) u_{i}+\frac{1}{q_{i}} u_{i+1}=\frac{z_{i}}{q_{i}}, \quad i=2, \ldots, n-2 . \tag{7.58}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here we can calculate the difference of domination as

$$
\left|\frac{2}{q_{i}}-h^{2}\right|-\left|\frac{1}{q_{i}}\right|-\left|\frac{1}{q_{i}}\right|=h^{2} .
$$

If $i=0$, then $u_{i}=0\left(S_{0}-S_{0}^{*}=0\right)$.
If $i=1$, we can take $a_{i, i-1}=0$ in (7.39) and divide the equation (7.41) by $3 y_{1}^{\prime \prime}$. This gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(-2 h^{2}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right) u_{1}+\left(h^{2}+O\left(h^{4}\right)\right) u_{2}=O\left(h^{6}\right) \tag{7.59}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observe here the diagonal dominance in rows with the difference $h^{2}+O\left(h^{4}\right)$.
The system (7.58), (7.59) and its counterpart for $i=n-1$ allows to get the estimate

$$
\left|u_{i}\right| \leq \frac{1}{h^{2}} \max _{1 \leq i \leq n-1}\left|\frac{z_{i}}{q_{i}}\right| \leq \max _{1 \leq i \leq n-1} \tilde{c}_{i} h^{2}+O\left(h^{3}\right), i=1, \ldots, n-1
$$

All in all,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|S-S^{*}\right\|_{\infty} \leq c_{0} h^{2}+O\left(h^{3}\right) \tag{7.60}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{0}=\frac{1}{12} \max _{1 \leq i \leq n-1}\left|\frac{y_{i}^{I V}-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}}{q_{i}}\right| \tag{7.61}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 7.4 Transformation of internal equations

In this section we study the internal equations $\varphi_{i}(S, m)=0, i=1, \ldots, n-1$.
The Taylor expansion of $\Phi(S, m)$ at point $\left(S^{*}, m\right)$ gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Phi(S, m)=\Phi\left(S^{*}, m\right)+\Phi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{S S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}+\frac{1}{6} \Phi_{S S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{3} \tag{7.62}
\end{equation*}
$$

This with the help of the following Taylor expansions at $\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Phi\left(S^{*}, m\right)= & \Phi\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)+\Phi_{m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{m m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2} \\
& +\frac{1}{6} \Phi_{m m m}\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{3} \\
\Phi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)= & \Phi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)+\Phi_{S m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{S m m}\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}, \\
\Phi_{S S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)= & \frac{1}{2} \Phi_{S S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{S S m}\left(m-m^{*}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

gives

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Phi_{m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)=-\left(\Phi\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{m m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}\right. \\
& \quad+\frac{1}{6} \Phi_{m m m}\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{3}+\Phi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)+\Phi_{S m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right) \\
& \quad+\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{S m m}\left(S-S^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}+\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{S S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}  \tag{7.63}\\
& \left.\quad+\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{S S m}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}\left(m-m^{*}\right)+\frac{1}{6} \Phi_{S S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{3}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

which we begin to study mainly for the components with indices $i=1, \ldots, n-1$.
Note that in the interior components of $\Phi\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)$ it holds $\varphi_{i}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=0$, $i=1, \ldots, n-1$, as $S_{*}$ is a quadratic/linear rational spline. If $\Phi_{m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)$ is invertible then by writing (7.63) as $\varphi_{i m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)=d_{i}(S, m)$ we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
m-m^{*}=\Phi_{m}^{-1}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right) d(S, m) \tag{7.64}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also, we use later $\varphi_{i m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)=d_{i}(S, m)$ as equations in system $B\left(m-m^{*}\right)=d$.

We calculate from (7.11) the components of $\varphi_{i m}(S, m)$ as

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i-1}} & =h\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right)^{2} \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i}}= & 2 h\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)\left(h m_{i+1}-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\right)  \tag{7.65}\\
& +2 h\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right)\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right) \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i+1}} & =h\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2}
\end{align*}
$$

With the help of (7.28) we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=\frac{h^{5}}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}+\frac{h^{6}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{7}}{24} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{I V}+\frac{h^{7}}{36}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}+o\left(h^{7}\right) \\
& \frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=h^{5}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}+\frac{h^{7}}{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{I V}-\frac{2}{9} h^{7}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}+o\left(h^{7}\right) \\
& \frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=\frac{h^{5}}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{h^{6}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{7}}{24} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{I V}+\frac{h^{7}}{36}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}+o\left(h^{7}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Clearly, there is diagonal dominance in rows and this implies the invertibility of $\Phi_{m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)$ if we have also appropriate transformations of equations $\varphi_{0}(S, m)=0$ and $\varphi_{n}(S, m)=0$.

Similarly we calculate from (7.11) the components of $\varphi_{i S}(S, m)$ as

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}= & 2\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)\left(h m_{i+1}-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\right)+\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right)^{2} \\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}= & -2\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)\left(h m_{i+1}-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\right)-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right)^{2} \\
& +\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2}+2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right)  \tag{7.66}\\
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}= & -2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right)-\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)^{2}
\end{align*}
$$

Note that $\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}+\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}+\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}=0$.
Using again the Taylor expansions (7.28) we obtain

$$
\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=\frac{3}{4} h^{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}+\frac{h^{5}}{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{5}{24} h^{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{I V}-\frac{h^{6}}{12}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}+o\left(h^{6}\right),
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=-\frac{2}{3} h^{5} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+o\left(h^{6}\right) \\
& \frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=-\frac{3}{4} h^{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}+\frac{h^{5}}{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{5}{24} h^{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{I V}+\frac{h^{6}}{12}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}+o\left(h^{6}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

We calculate for $\varphi_{i S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}, m\right)=\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)+2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(h m_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-S_{i}^{*}\right)\right) \\
& +2 h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)\left(h m_{i}^{*}-\left(S_{i}^{*}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)-2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-S_{i}^{*}+h m_{i}^{*}\right) \\
& +2 h^{2}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)+h^{2}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{5}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}, m\right)=\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)-\left(2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(h m_{i+1}^{*}-\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-S_{i}^{*}\right)\right)\right. \\
& +2 h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)\left(h m_{i}^{*}-\left(S_{i}^{*}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)+2 h^{2}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right) \\
& -2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-S_{i}^{*}+h m_{i}^{*}\right)-2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(h m_{i}^{*}-\left(S_{i}^{*}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)  \tag{7.67}\\
& +2 h\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-S_{i}^{*}-h m_{i}^{*}\right)+2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(S_{i}^{*}-S_{i-1}^{*}-h m_{i-1}^{*}\right) \\
& \left.-2 h^{2}\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}, m\right)=\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)-2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(h m_{i}^{*}-\left(S_{i}^{*}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right) \\
& +2 h\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)\left(S_{i+1}^{*}-S_{i}^{*}-h m_{i}^{*}\right)+2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(S_{i}^{*}-S_{i-1}^{*}-h m_{i-1}^{*}\right) \\
& -2 h^{2}\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)-h^{2}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{5}\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Second order partial derivatives are calculated from (7.65) and are

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i-1}^{2}}=0 \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i-1} \partial m_{i}}=-2 h^{2}\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right) \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i-1} \partial m_{i+1}}=0
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i} \partial m_{i-1}}=-2 h^{2}\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}-h m_{i}\right) \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i}^{2}}=2 h^{2}\left(h m_{i+1}-\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i}\right)\right)-2 h^{2}\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right) \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i} \partial m_{i+1}}=2 h^{2}\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right) \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i+1} \partial m_{i-1}}=0 \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i+1} \partial m_{i}}=2 h^{2}\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right) \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i+1}^{2}}=0
\end{aligned}
$$

They give

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i-1}^{2}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=0 \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i-1} \partial m_{i}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=-h^{4} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i-1} \partial m_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=0, \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i} \partial m_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=-h^{4} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i}^{2}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=O\left(h^{5}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i} \partial m_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=h^{4} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i+1} \partial m_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=0, \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i+1} \partial m_{i}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=h^{4} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{5}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{i+1}^{2}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=0
$$

From (7.66) we find also with the help of Taylor expansions

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}^{2}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{2}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{1}{4} h^{4} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1} \partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=-h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{4}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{1}{4} h^{4} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1} \partial S_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=\frac{2}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i} \partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=-h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{4}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{1}{4} h^{4} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}^{2}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=\frac{8}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i} \partial S_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{4}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{1}{4} h^{4} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1} \partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=\frac{2}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1} \partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{4}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{1}{4} h^{4} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}^{2}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)=-h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{2}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}-\frac{1}{4} h^{4} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and for every $j, k$

$$
\sum_{j} \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{j} \partial S_{k}}=0, \quad \sum_{k} \frac{\partial^{2} \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{j} \partial S_{k}}=0
$$

Similarly we get for every $j, k, l$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{3} \varphi_{i}}{\partial m_{j} \partial m_{k} \partial m_{l}}=O\left(h^{3}\right) . \tag{7.68}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us start with the estimate of

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Phi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)= & \Phi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)+\Phi_{S m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{S m m}\left(S-S^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Using (7.29) and

$$
2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)=v_{i}=w_{i}+\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right)
$$

we can write due to (7.67)

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \quad \frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}, m\right)=\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i-1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right) \\
& \quad+\left(w_{i}+\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right)\right)\left(\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{12} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right)\right) \\
& \quad+\left(w_{i+1}+\left(u_{i+2}-u_{i}\right)\right)\left(\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right)\right) \\
& \quad+h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(w_{i+1}+\left(u_{i+2}-u_{i}\right)\right)+h^{2}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{5}\right), \\
& \frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}, m\right)=\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right) \\
& +2 h^{2}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)-\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)\right) \\
& -\left(w_{i}+\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right)\right)\left(\frac{h^{4}}{6} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right)\right) \\
& -\left(w_{i-1}+\left(u_{i}-u_{i-2}\right)\right)\left(\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right)\right) \\
& -\left(w_{i+1}+\left(u_{i+2}-u_{i}\right)\right)\left(\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right)\right)+O\left(h^{5}\right), \\
& \quad \frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}, m\right)=\frac{\partial \varphi_{i}}{\partial S_{i+1}}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right) \\
& \quad+\left(w_{i}+\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right)\right)\left(-\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{12} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right)\right) \\
& \quad+\left(w_{i-1}+\left(u_{i}-u_{i-2}\right)\right)\left(\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+\frac{h^{4}}{24} y_{i}^{I V}+o\left(h^{4}\right)\right) \\
& \quad-h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)\left(w_{i-1}+\left(u_{i}-u_{i-2}\right)\right)-h^{2}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{5}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

These partial derivatives allow to form the expression $\varphi_{i S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)$. In that the terms in $\varphi_{i S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)$ with $\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} w_{i}$ give

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(w_{i} u_{i-1}+w_{i+1} u_{i-1}-w_{i} u_{i-1}-w_{i} u_{i+1}+w_{i-1} u_{i+1}+w_{i} u_{i+1}-\left(w_{i+1}+w_{i-1}\right) u_{i}\right) \\
& =\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(w_{i+1}\left(u_{i-1}-u_{i}\right)+w_{i-1}\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

which we can estimate by $c c_{3} h^{10}$ (here and in the sequel, in similar reasonings, $c$ denotes a positive constant depending only on the boundary value problem).

We estimate other terms with $w_{i}$ by $c c_{3} h^{10}+c c_{3} h^{11}$.
Members with $\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right)$ are

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(\left(u_{i+2}-u_{i}\right) u_{i-1}+\left(u_{i}-u_{i-2}\right) u_{i+1}-\left(u_{i+2}-u_{i-2}\right) u_{i}\right) \\
& =\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(\left(u_{i+2}-u_{i}\right)\left(u_{i-1}-u_{i}\right)+\left(u_{i}-u_{i-2}\right)\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i}\right)\right) \\
& =\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(\left(-u_{i+2}+2 u_{i+1}-u_{i}\right)\left(u_{i}-u_{i-1}\right)-2\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i}\right)\left(u_{i}-u_{i-1}\right)\right. \\
& \left.\quad+\left(-u_{i-2}+2 u_{i-1}-u_{i}\right)\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i}\right)+2\left(u_{i}-u_{i-1}\right)\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

which give $c c_{2} h^{9}$.
Similarly we can estimate other members in $\varphi_{i S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)$ by the term $c h^{9}+c c_{0} h^{9}+c c_{0}^{2} h^{9}+c c_{3} h^{10}$.

All in all,

$$
\left|\varphi_{i S}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)\right| \leq c c_{2} h^{9}+c h^{9}+c c_{0} h^{9}+c c_{0}^{2} h^{9}+c c_{3} h^{10}+c c_{3} h^{11}
$$

In $\frac{1}{2} \varphi_{i m m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}$ members with $\frac{1}{2} h^{4} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}$ are

$$
\begin{aligned}
h^{4} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right) \frac{1}{2 h}\left(w_{i+1}-w_{i-1}\right. & +\left(u_{i+2}-2 u_{i+1}+u_{i}\right) \\
& \left.+2\left(u_{i+1}-2 u_{i}+u_{i-1}\right)+\left(u_{i}-2 u_{i-1}+u_{i-2}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and can be estimated by $c c_{0} c_{2} h^{9}+c c_{3} c_{0} h^{10}$.
Other terms in $\frac{1}{2} \varphi_{i m m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}$ give $c c_{0}^{2} h^{9}$, thus,

$$
\left|\frac{1}{2} \varphi_{i m m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}\right| \leq c c_{0} c_{2} h^{9}+c c_{0}^{2} h^{9}+c c_{3} c_{0} h^{10}
$$

Because of (7.68) we have

$$
\left|\frac{1}{6} \varphi_{i m m m}\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{3}\right| \leq c c_{0}^{3} h^{9}
$$

For $\frac{1}{2} \varphi_{i S S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}$ we calculate

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{2} h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\left(-u_{i-1}+2 u_{i}-u_{i+1}\right)\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right) \\
& \quad+\frac{1}{3} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(u_{i-1}-2 u_{i}+u_{i+1}\right)^{2}+\frac{1}{8} h^{4} y_{i}^{I V}\left(-u_{i-1}+2 u_{i}-u_{i+1}\right)\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

in which the terms in the sum can be estimated by $c c_{2} h^{9}+c c_{2} h^{11}+c c_{2} h^{11}$, respectively, therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\frac{1}{2} \varphi_{i S S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}\right| \leq c c_{2} h^{9}+c c_{2} h^{11} \tag{7.69}
\end{equation*}
$$

Due to Lemma 6.1 the members in $\frac{1}{2} \varphi_{i S S m}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}\left(m-m^{*}\right)$ can be estimated by $c c_{0} h^{9}$.

Similar reasoning allows to show that

$$
\left|\frac{1}{6} \varphi_{i S S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{3}\right|=\left|\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i}\right)\left(u_{i}-u_{i-1}\right)\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right)\right| \leq c h^{9}
$$

### 7.5 Existence of the solution for collocation problem

In this section we use the Bohl-Brouwer fixed point theorem to show the existence of solution of the basic system $\Phi(S, m)=0, \Psi(S, m)=0$.

Consider the equations $S=G(S, m)$, where

$$
G(S, m)=S^{*}-\Psi_{S}^{-1}\left(S^{*}, m\right)\left(\Psi\left(S^{*}, m\right)+\frac{1}{2} \Psi_{S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}\right)
$$

and $m=H(S, m)$ where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& H(S, m)=m^{*}+\Phi_{m}^{-1}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(-\Phi\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)-\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{m m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}\right. \\
& \quad-\frac{1}{6} \Phi_{m m m}\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{3}-\Phi_{S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)-\Phi_{S m}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right) \\
& \quad-\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{S m m}\left(S-S^{*}\right)\left(m-m^{*}\right)^{2}-\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{S S}\left(S^{*}, m^{*}\right)\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2} \\
& \left.\quad-\frac{1}{2} \Phi_{S S m}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{2}\left(m-m^{*}\right)-\frac{1}{6} \Phi_{S S S}\left(S-S^{*}\right)^{3}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and which are equivalent to $\Psi(S, m)=0$ and $\Phi(S, m)=0$, respectively.
Let $F(S, m)=(G(S, m), H(G(S, m), m))$ with $F: \mathbb{R}^{2 n+2} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{2 n+2}$ and let us introduce the set

$$
\begin{aligned}
K=\{ & (S, m) \in \mathbb{R}^{2 n+2} \mid S_{0}=\alpha, S_{n}=\beta \\
& \left|S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right| \leq c_{1} h^{2}, i=1, \ldots, n-1, \\
& \left.\mid\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)-2\left(S_{i}-S_{i}^{*}\right)+\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right) \mid \leq c_{2} h^{4}, i=1, \ldots, n-1, \\
& \left|2 h\left(m_{i}-m_{i}^{*}\right)-\left(\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)\right)\right| \leq c_{3} h^{5}, i=1, \ldots, n-1, \\
& \left|2 h\left(m_{0}-m_{0}^{*}\right)-2\left(S_{1}-S_{1}^{*}\right)\right| \leq \tilde{c}_{3} h^{4}, \\
& \left.\left|2 h\left(m_{n}-m_{n}^{*}\right)-2\left(S_{n-1}-S_{n-1}^{*}\right)\right| \leq \tilde{c}_{3} h^{4}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

with numbers $c_{1}>0, c_{2}>0, c_{3}>0, \tilde{c}_{3}>0$ which will be specified later. The set $K$ is convex and compact.

Our main purpose is now to show that $F: K \rightarrow K$. This allows us to use BohlBrouwer fixed point theorem. Let $(S, m) \in K$ and $\bar{S}=G(S, m), \bar{m}=H(\bar{S}, m)=$ $H(G(S, m), m)$. We show that then $(\bar{S}, \bar{m}) \in K$.

Firstly, from the estimate (7.60) we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\bar{S}-S^{*}\right\|_{\infty} \leq c_{0} h^{2}+O\left(h^{3}\right) \tag{7.70}
\end{equation*}
$$

If we choose e.g., $c_{1}=2 c_{0}$, then $c_{0} h^{2}+O\left(h^{3}\right) \leq c_{1} h^{2}$ holds with sufficiently small value of $h$.

In Section 7.3 we showed that for $i=1, \ldots, n-1$

$$
\left|\frac{\bar{z}_{i}}{q_{i}}\right| \leq h_{1 \leq i \leq n-1}^{4} \max _{1 \leq i}\left|\tilde{c}_{i}\right|+O\left(h^{5}\right)
$$

or

$$
\left|\bar{z}_{i}\right| \leq h^{4}\left|q_{i}\right| \max _{1 \leq i \leq n-1}\left|\tilde{c}_{i}\right|+O\left(h^{5}\right)
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{z}_{i}=\bar{u}_{i-1}-\left(2-h^{2} q_{i}\right) \bar{u}_{i}+\bar{u}_{i+1} \tag{7.71}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\bar{u}_{i}=\bar{S}_{i}-S_{i}^{*}$ and where $\tilde{c}_{i}$ is given in (7.42). From (7.71) we get

$$
\bar{u}_{i-1}-2 \bar{u}_{i}+\bar{u}_{i+1}=\bar{z}_{i}-h^{2} q_{i} \bar{u}_{i}
$$

which due to (7.70) implies

$$
\left|\bar{u}_{i-1}-2 \bar{u}_{i}+\bar{u}_{i+1}\right| \leq\left|\bar{z}_{i}\right|-h^{2}\left|q_{i}\right|\left|\bar{u}_{i}\right| \leq c_{2} h^{4}
$$

with suitable choice of the constant $c_{2}$.
In Section 7.3 we constructed a system $A\left(S-S^{*}\right)=b$ with equations corresponding to (7.39), (7.40) and having indices $i=2, \ldots, n-2$. Divide those
equations by $h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}$ and move $h\left(m_{i+1}-m_{i+1}^{*}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}-m_{i-1}^{*}\right)$ to the left hand side. Then the higher order term of the new system $\tilde{A}\left(S-S^{*}\right)=\tilde{b}$ in the left hand side is

$$
3 u_{i-1}-6 u_{i}+3 u_{i+1}-\frac{1}{2}\left(v_{i+1}-v_{i-1}\right)
$$

Similarly, after dividing the components with indices $i=1, \ldots, n-1$ in system $B\left(m-m^{*}\right)=d$ by $\frac{8}{h^{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}}$ the main term in left hand side is $v_{i-1}+4 v_{i}+v_{i+1}-$ $6\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right)$ and we denote the obtained system by $\tilde{B}\left(m-m^{*}\right)=\tilde{d}$.

Let us form now the equation

$$
\begin{align*}
& {\left[\tilde{A}\left(S-S^{*}\right)\right]_{i-1}-\left[\tilde{A}\left(S-S^{*}\right)\right]_{i+1} } \\
& \quad-\frac{1}{2}\left[\tilde{B}\left(m-m^{*}\right)\right]_{i-1}+2\left[\tilde{B}\left(m-m^{*}\right)\right]_{i}-\frac{1}{2}\left[\tilde{B}\left(m-m^{*}\right)\right]_{i+1}  \tag{7.72}\\
& \quad= \tilde{b}_{i-1}-\tilde{b}_{i+1}-\frac{1}{2} \tilde{d}_{i-1}+2 \tilde{d}_{i}-\frac{1}{2} \tilde{d}_{i+1}
\end{align*}
$$

Then the main terms in the left hand side of the obtained equations give

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(3 u_{i-2}-6 u_{i-1}+3 u_{i}-\frac{1}{2}\left(v_{i}-v_{i-2}\right)\right)-\left(3 u_{i}-6 u_{i+1}+3 u_{i+2}-\frac{1}{2}\left(v_{i+2}-v_{i}\right)\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{2}\left(\left(v_{i-2}+4 v_{i-1}+v_{i}\right)-6\left(u_{i}-u_{i-2}\right)\right)+2\left(\left(v_{i-1}+4 v_{i}+v_{i+1}\right)-6\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right)\right) \\
& -\frac{1}{2}\left(\left(v_{i}+4 v_{i+1}+v_{i+2}\right)-6\left(u_{i+2}-u_{i}\right)\right)=6\left(v_{i}-\left(u_{i+1}-u_{i-1}\right)\right)=6 w_{i}
\end{aligned}
$$

Actually, we transformed and managed with the systems $A\left(\bar{S}-S^{*}\right)=d(S, m)$ and $B\left(\bar{m}-m^{*}\right)=d(\bar{S}, m)$, thus, we get $6 \bar{w}_{i}$ in (7.72). Observe that the terms together besides $6 \bar{w}_{i}$ on the left hand side of (7.72) could be estimated by $O\left(h^{5}\right)$ and we have already estimated $\tilde{b}_{i}$ and $\tilde{d}_{i}$ by $O\left(h^{5}\right)$ (See Sections 7.3 and 7.4). This gives $\left|\bar{w}_{i}\right| \leq c_{3} h^{5}$ for suitable choice of $c_{3}$.

Next, the equation (7.55) allows to determine the equation $\left[B\left(m-m^{*}\right)\right]_{0}=d_{0}$ participating in the formation of $m=H(S, m)$. From

$$
\left(\frac{3}{2} h y_{0}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{2}}{4} q_{0} y_{0}^{\prime \prime}\right) h \bar{w}_{0}+\frac{3}{2} h^{2} y_{0}^{\prime \prime} \bar{w}_{1}=d_{0}(\bar{S}, m)
$$

provided we have $\bar{w}_{1}=O\left(h^{5}\right)$ we get $\bar{w}_{0}=O\left(h^{4}\right)$ because $d_{0}(\bar{S}, m)=O\left(h^{6}\right)$. To prove $\bar{w}_{1}=O\left(h^{5}\right)$ we use the ideas of the case $i=2, \ldots, n-2$ and form the equation

$$
\begin{gather*}
-\left[\tilde{A}\left(S-S^{*}\right)\right]_{2}-\frac{1}{2}\left[\tilde{B}\left(m-m^{*}\right)\right]_{2}+\left[\tilde{A}\left(S-S^{*}\right)\right]_{1}+\frac{5}{2}\left[\tilde{B}\left(m-m^{*}\right)\right]_{1}-3\left[\tilde{B}\left(m-m^{*}\right)\right]_{0} \\
=-\tilde{b}_{2}-\frac{1}{2} \tilde{d}_{2}+\tilde{b}_{1}+\frac{5}{2} \tilde{d}_{1}-3 \tilde{d}_{0} \tag{7.73}
\end{gather*}
$$

E.g., the main terms in the left hand side of (7.73) give $6 \bar{w}_{1}$.

All in all, $F: K \rightarrow K$ and we can use the Bohl-Brouwer fixed point theorem, by which the set $K$ contains a fixed point of the function $F$ which is also a solution of the basic system.

### 7.6 Convergence estimates

In this section we establish in uniform norm the convergence rates of collocation method described in Section 7.1 with quadratic/linear rational splines for boundary value problem (7.1), (7.2).

We remind that in previous section we proved that the set $K$ contains a fixed point of the function $F$ which is also a solution of the basic system $\Phi(S, m)=0$, $\Psi(S, m)=0$. Denote now by $S$ the quadratic/linear rational spline having as knot values this vector in $K$ and we also remind that $S_{*}$ is a special quadratic/linear rational spline interpolant to the solution $y$ of (7.1), (7.2). It is known, that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|S_{*}-y\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{4}\right) \tag{7.74}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|S_{*}^{\prime}-y^{\prime}\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{3}\right) \tag{7.75}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 7.1. For the solution $S$ of the problem (7.3), (7.4) having the vector of values in $K$ it holds $\left\|S^{(k)}\right\|_{\infty}=\max _{1 \leq i \leq n} \max _{x_{i-1} \leq x \leq x_{i}}\left|S^{(k)}(x)\right| \leq C_{k}, k \geq 2$.

Proof. From (3.1) we obtain (if $k \geq 2$ )

$$
S^{(k)}(x)=\frac{(-1)^{k} k!c_{i} d_{i}^{k}}{\left(1+d_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)\right)^{k+1}}, x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]
$$

We indicated in Section 3.1 that $c_{i}$ and $d_{i}$ could be expressed via the first moments $m_{i}$ and spline values $S_{i}$. Namely,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& c_{i}=\frac{\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)^{2}\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)}{\left(2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)\right)^{2}} \\
& d_{i}=\frac{2\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)-h\left(m_{i-1}+m_{i}\right)}{h\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

With the help of (7.25), (7.26) and (7.29) we find

$$
d_{i}=\frac{-\frac{1}{6} h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right)}{h\left(\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{3}\right)\right)}=-\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{3 y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}+O(h)
$$

and then

$$
c_{i} d_{i}^{2}=\frac{\frac{h^{4}}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}+O\left(h^{5}\right)}{h^{2}\left(\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O\left(h^{3}\right)\right)}=\frac{1}{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+O(h)\right)
$$

which implies the assertion.

From (7.22) with the help of (7.44) we get

$$
S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)-S_{*}^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)=\frac{\left(S_{i+1}-S_{i+1}^{*}\right)-\left(S_{i-1}-S_{i-1}^{*}\right)}{2 h}+O\left(h^{4}\right)=O\left(h^{2}\right) .
$$

Thus, we obtain from

$$
\left|S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)-y^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)\right| \leq\left|S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)-S_{*}^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)\right|+\left|S_{*}^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)-y^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)\right|
$$

by (7.75) that it holds

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)-y^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)=O\left(h^{2}\right) \tag{7.76}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the estimate $\left|S\left(x_{i}\right)-y\left(x_{i}\right)\right| \leq\left|S\left(x_{i}\right)-S_{*}\left(x_{i}\right)\right|+\left|S_{*}\left(x_{i}\right)-y\left(x_{i}\right)\right|$ we get by (7.70) and (7.74)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|S\left(x_{i}\right)-y\left(x_{i}\right)\right| \leq c_{0} h^{2}+O\left(h^{3}\right) \tag{7.77}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $c_{0}$ is determined in (7.61).
Next, by (7.1) and (7.3) we may write

$$
S^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)+p\left(x_{i}\right)\left(S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)-y^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)\right)+q\left(x_{i}\right)\left(S\left(x_{i}\right)-y\left(x_{i}\right)\right)=0
$$

which, with the help of (7.77) and (7.76) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)=O\left(h^{2}\right) \tag{7.78}
\end{equation*}
$$

The Taylor expansion for $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$
$S^{\prime}(x)-y^{\prime}(x)=S^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)-y^{\prime}\left(x_{i}\right)+\left(S^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)\right)\left(x-x_{i}\right)+\frac{1}{2}\left(S^{\prime \prime \prime}-y^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)\left(\xi_{i}\right)\left(x-x_{i}\right)^{2}$
thanks to (7.76), (7.78) and Proposition 7.1 gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{a \leq x \leq b}\left|S^{\prime}(x)-y^{\prime}(x)\right|=O\left(h^{2}\right) \tag{7.79}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now our aim is to show $\left\|S^{\prime \prime}-y^{\prime \prime}\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{2}\right)$. Consider the expansion

$$
y^{\prime \prime}(x)=y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)+y^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)\left(x-x_{i}\right)+O\left(h^{2}\right), x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]
$$

which, by setting $x=x_{i-1}+\tau h, \tau \in[0,1]$, is

$$
\begin{equation*}
y^{\prime \prime}(x)=y^{\prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)+(\tau-1) h y^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(x_{i}\right)+O\left(h^{2}\right), \tau \in[0,1] . \tag{7.80}
\end{equation*}
$$

In (3.3) we find by using the representations for $c_{i}$ and $d_{i}$ from Section 3.1 and (7.29) that
$c_{i} d_{i}^{2}=\frac{\left(S-S_{i-1}-h m_{i-1}\right)^{2}}{h^{2}\left(h m_{i}-\left(S_{i}-S_{i-1}\right)\right)}=\frac{\frac{h^{4}}{4}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}-\frac{h^{5}}{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+O\left(h^{6}\right)}{\frac{h^{2}}{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-\frac{h^{3}}{6} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right)}=\frac{h^{2}}{2}\left(y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-h y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+O\left(h^{2}\right)\right)$
and by $d_{i}=-\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{3 y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}$ which we already obtained in proof of Proposition 7.1 we get

$$
\left(1+d_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)\right)^{3}=1+3 d_{i}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)+O\left(h^{2}\right)=1-\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)+O\left(h^{2}\right) .
$$

Thus, we have for $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$

$$
S^{\prime \prime}(x)=\frac{h^{2} y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-h^{3} y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+O\left(h^{4}\right)}{h^{2}\left(1-\frac{y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}}{y_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)+O\left(h^{2}\right)\right)}=y_{i}^{\prime \prime}-h y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(x-x_{i-1}\right)+O\left(h^{2}\right)
$$

or by changing the variable $x=x_{i-1}+\tau h, \tau \in[0,1]$

$$
S^{\prime \prime}(x)=y_{i}^{\prime \prime}+(\tau-1) h y_{i}^{\prime \prime \prime}+O\left(h^{2}\right)
$$

This with expansion (7.80) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{a \leq x \leq b}\left|S^{\prime \prime}(x)-y^{\prime \prime}(x)\right|=O\left(h^{2}\right) \tag{7.81}
\end{equation*}
$$

But the expansion for $x \in\left[x_{i-1}, x_{i}\right]$

$$
S(x)-y(x)=S\left(x_{i}\right)-y\left(x_{i}\right)+\left(S^{\prime}-y^{\prime}\right)\left(\zeta_{i}\right)\left(x-x_{i}\right)
$$

and (7.79) due to (7.77) yields (for $y \in C^{4}[a, b]$ as general case)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{a \leq x \leq b}|S(x)-y(x)| \leq c_{0} h^{2}+o\left(h^{2}\right) . \tag{7.82}
\end{equation*}
$$

We have proved as our main result in this chapter the following
Theorem 7.1. Let the solution $y \in C^{4}[a, b]$ of boundary value problem (7.1), (7.2) be strictly convex. Then, for sufficiently small $h$, the collocation problem (7.3), (7.4) has a quadratic/linear rational spline $S$ as solution with convergence estimates (7.82) ( $c_{0}$ is determined in (7.61)), (7.79) and (7.81). The rest term $o\left(h^{2}\right)$ in (7.82) is actually $O\left(h^{2+\alpha}\right)$ in the case $y^{I V} \in \operatorname{Lip} \alpha, 0<\alpha \leq 1$.

In collocation with cubic splines, see, e.g., [39], it is known the estimate

$$
\|S-y\|_{\infty} \leq \frac{h^{2}}{12} \max _{1 \leq i \leq n-1}\left|\frac{y^{I V}}{q}\left(x_{i}\right)\right|+o\left(h^{2}\right)
$$

In comparison to (7.82), the additional members in $c_{0}$ could make the main part of the estimate for quadratic/linear rational splines smaller or greater than in case of cubic splines. In Chapter 8 there is a numerical example in which the rational splines have really considerably smaller error.

## Chapter 8

## Numerical examples

In this chapter we present the numerical examples.
In the thesis we deal with quadratic, cubic, linear/linear and quadratic/linear rational splines. We point out, that it would be easy to construct an example of boundary value or interpolation problem whose exact solution is one of the mentioned splines but is not any other of them. For example let a quadratic spline be the exact solution of the test problem but not any other spline written above. In comparison, this gives an advantage to quadratic splines because the error in interpolation or collocation is automatically zero for them and different from zero for all other types of splines. Our aim in numerical examples is to take a simple and ordinary function and show that in that case the rational splines have better results.

We interpolated the function

$$
y(x)=\frac{1}{x^{2}}
$$

on the interval $\left[-2,-\frac{1}{5}\right]$.
The boundary value problem which we solved by collocation method is

$$
\begin{gathered}
y^{\prime \prime}-x y^{\prime}-8 x^{4} y=\frac{6}{x^{4}}+\frac{2}{x^{2}}-8 x^{2}, \quad x \in\left(-2,-\frac{1}{5}\right) \\
y(-2)=\frac{1}{4}, \quad y\left(-\frac{1}{5}\right)=25
\end{gathered}
$$

with the exact solution $y(x)=\frac{1}{x^{2}}$.
The results could be found in the following sections and tables.

### 8.1 Linear/linear rational spline interpolation

We interpolated the test function by linear/linear rational spline $S$ as described in Section 4.1. The boundary conditions (4.2) with

$$
\alpha_{1}=y_{0}+\frac{3}{64} h^{4} \frac{1}{x_{0}^{6}}, \quad \alpha_{2}=y_{n}+\frac{3}{64} h^{4} \frac{1}{x_{n}^{6}}
$$

were used. The "three-diagonal" nonlinear system to determine the values of $S_{i}$ was solved by Newton's method. The iterations were stopped at $\left\|S^{k}-S^{k-1}\right\|_{\infty} \leq 10^{-10}$, $S^{k}$ being the sequence of approximations to the vector $S=\left(S_{0}, \ldots, S_{n}\right)$. The errors $\varepsilon_{n}=S\left(z_{i}\right)-y\left(z_{i}\right)$ and $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}=S^{\prime \prime}\left(z_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime}\left(z_{i}\right)$ were calculated in certain superconvergence points $z_{i}$. Results of numerical tests in Tables 8.1-8.2 support the theory.

Table 8.1: Numerical results for $\varepsilon_{n}=S\left(z_{i}\right)-y\left(z_{i}\right), i=1,2,3$.

|  | $z_{1}=-1.55$ |  |  | $z_{2}=-1.1$ |  |  | $z_{3}=-0.65$ |  |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| $n$ | $\varepsilon_{n}$ | $\varepsilon_{n}^{2} / \varepsilon_{n}$ |  | $\varepsilon_{n}$ | $\varepsilon_{n} / \varepsilon_{n}$ |  | $\varepsilon_{n}$ | $\varepsilon_{\frac{n}{2}} / \varepsilon_{n}$ |
| 16 | $5.381 \cdot 10^{-7}$ |  |  | $4.189 \cdot 10^{-6}$ |  |  | $9.697 \cdot 10^{-5}$ |  |
| 32 | $3.379 \cdot 10^{-8}$ | 15.931 |  | $2.641 \cdot 10^{-7}$ | 15.861 |  | $6.170 \cdot 10^{-6}$ | 15.716 |
| 64 | $2.114 \cdot 10^{-9}$ | 15.984 |  | $1.654 \cdot 10^{-8}$ | 15.967 |  | $3.881 \cdot 10^{-7}$ | 15.984 |
| 128 | $1.322 \cdot 10^{-10}$ | 15.991 |  | $1.035 \cdot 10^{-9}$ | 15.981 |  | $2.429 \cdot 10^{-8}$ | 15.978 |
| 256 | $8.262 \cdot 10^{-12}$ | 16.001 |  | $6.467 \cdot 10^{-11}$ | 16.004 |  | $1.519 \cdot 10^{-9}$ | 15.991 |

Table 8.2: Numerical results for $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}=S^{\prime \prime}\left(z_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime}\left(z_{i}\right), i=1,2$.

|  | $z_{1}=\frac{a+b}{2}-\frac{h}{2}$ |  |  | $z_{2}=\frac{a+b}{2}+\frac{h}{2}$ |  |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n$ | $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ | $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime} / \varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ |  | $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ | $\varepsilon_{\frac{n}{2}}^{\prime \prime} / \varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ |
| 16 | $-2.602 \cdot 10^{-3}$ |  |  | $-4.789 \cdot 10^{-3}$ |  |
| 32 | $-7.639 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | 3.406 |  | $-4.037 \cdot 10^{-3}$ | 4.618 |
| 64 | $-1.066 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | 3.697 |  | $-2.408 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | 4.306 |
| 128 | $-5.370 \cdot 10^{-5}$ | 3.847 |  | $-5.798 \cdot 10^{-5}$ | 4.153 |
| 256 | $-1.369 \cdot 10^{-5}$ | 3.923 |  | $-1.422 \cdot 10^{-5}$ | 4.077 |
| 512 | $-3.522 \cdot 10^{-6}$ | 3.964 |  | $-3.455 \cdot 10^{-6}$ | 4.116 |

### 8.2 Quadratic/linear rational spline interpolation

We also interpolated the test function by quadratic/linear rational spline $S$ as described in Section 5.1. The boundary conditions (5.3) with

$$
\alpha_{1}=y_{0}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{2}{3} h^{2} \frac{1}{x_{0}^{6}}, \quad \alpha_{2}=y_{n}^{\prime \prime}+\frac{2}{3} h^{2} \frac{1}{x_{n}^{6}}
$$

were used. Likewise to linear/linear rational spline case the "three-diagonal" nonlinear system to determine the values $M_{i}$ was solved by Newton's method and the iterations were stopped at $\left\|M^{k}-M^{k-1}\right\|_{\infty} \leq 10^{-10}, M^{k}$ being the sequence of approximations to the vector $M=\left(M_{0}, \ldots, M_{n}\right)$. The errors $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime}=S^{\prime}\left(z_{i}\right)-y^{\prime}\left(z_{i}\right)$ and $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime \prime}=S^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(z_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(z_{i}\right)$ were calculated in certain superconvergence points $z_{i}$. Again, the results confirm the convergence rates predicted by the theory.

| Table 8.3: Numerical results for $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime}=S^{\prime}(-1.1)-y^{\prime}(-1.1)$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n$ | 16 | 32 | 64 | 128 | 256 | 512 |
| $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime}$ | $1.18 \cdot 10^{-5}$ | $7.55 \cdot 10^{-7}$ | $4.75 \cdot 10^{-8}$ | $2.97 \cdot 10^{-9}$ | $1.86 \cdot 10^{-10}$ | $1.16 \cdot 10^{-11}$ |
| $\varepsilon_{\frac{n}{2}}^{\prime} / \varepsilon_{n}^{\prime}$ |  | 15.6055 | 15.9101 | 15.9774 | 15.9938 | 16.0075 |

Table 8.4: Numerical results for $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime \prime}=S^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(z_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime \prime}\left(z_{i}\right), i=1,2$.

|  | $z_{1}=\frac{a+b}{2}-\frac{h}{2}$ |  |  | $z_{2}=\frac{a+b}{2}+\frac{h}{2}$ |  |
| ---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime \prime}$ | $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime \prime} / \varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime \prime}$ |  | $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime \prime}$ | $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime \prime} / \varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime \prime}$ |
| 16 | $-6.9813 \cdot 10^{-3}$ |  |  | $-1.4140 \cdot 10^{-2}$ |  |
| 32 | $-2.1037 \cdot 10^{-3}$ | 3.3186 |  | $-3.0075 \cdot 10^{-3}$ | 4.7017 |
| 64 | $-5.7679 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | 3.6473 |  | $-6.8979 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | 4.3600 |
| 128 | $-1.5091 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | 3.8221 |  | $-1.6504 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | 4.1796 |
| 256 | $-3.8583 \cdot 10^{-5}$ | 3.9113 |  | $-4.0362 \cdot 10^{-5}$ | 4.0889 |
| 512 | $-9.9922 \cdot 10^{-6}$ | 3.8613 |  | $-9.7364 \cdot 10^{-6}$ | 4.1454 |

### 8.3 Linear/linear rational spline collocation

We solved the test problem with linear/linear rational splines $S$ as described in the beginning of Chapter 6 . The nonlinear system to determine the values of $S_{i}$ and $\bar{S}_{i}$ was solved by Newton's method and the iterations were stopped at $\left\|S^{k}-S^{k-1}\right\|_{\infty} \leq 10^{-10}, S^{k}$ being the sequence of approximations to the vector $S=\left(S_{0}, \bar{S}_{1}, S_{1}, \ldots, S_{n}, \bar{S}_{n}\right)$. In addition, we present the results for the test problem by quadratic spline collocation method, see, e.g., [39]. In [39], for implementation, B-splines are used. In following tests, we used the first moments for quadratic spline $S_{2}$. Given numbers in Table 8.5 in the upper row are the errors calculated approximately on tenfold refined grid as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta_{n}=\max _{1 \leq i \leq n} \max _{0 \leq k \leq 10}\left|\left(S_{2}-y\right)\left(x_{i-1}+k h / 10\right)\right| \tag{8.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similarly to (8.1) we calculated $\varepsilon_{n}$ as being the approximate values of $\|S-y\|_{\infty}$ where $S$ is the linear/linear rational spline. They are presented in the middle
row of Table 8.5. The results show that the error is approximately ten times less for linear/linear rational spline. Numbers in third row of Table 8.5 confirm the convergence rate $O\left(h^{2}\right)$ for linear/linear rational spline collocation established in Chapter 6.

In our example we have the functions

$$
\begin{gathered}
g_{1}(x)=\left|\frac{y^{I V}-p y^{\prime \prime \prime}-6 \frac{y^{\prime \prime \prime} y^{\prime \prime}}{y^{\prime}}+6 \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime}\right)^{3}}{\left(y^{\prime}\right)^{2}}+\frac{3}{2} p \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime}}}{q}(x)\right|=\frac{3\left(x^{2}+4\right)}{8 x^{10}} \\
g_{2}(x)=\left|\frac{y^{I V}-p y^{\prime \prime \prime}}{q}(x)\right|=\frac{3\left(5-x^{2}\right)}{x^{10}}
\end{gathered}
$$

and they are increasing if $x<0$. Then $g_{2}\left(-\frac{1}{5}\right) / g_{1}\left(-\frac{1}{5}\right)=\frac{992}{101}$ which is consistent with numerical results presented in Table 8.5.

Table 8.5: Numerical results for $\delta_{n}$ and $\varepsilon_{n}$

| $n$ | 16 | 32 | 64 | 128 | 256 | 512 |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\delta_{n}$ | $8.60 \cdot 10^{-1}$ | $3.13 \cdot 10^{-1}$ | $8.70 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | $2.20 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | $5.60 \cdot 10^{-3}$ | $1.40 \cdot 10^{-3}$ |
| $\varepsilon_{n}$ | $2.10 \cdot 10^{-1}$ | $4.17 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | $9.67 \cdot 10^{-3}$ | $2.37 \cdot 10^{-3}$ | $5.88 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | $1.47 \cdot 10^{-4}$ |
| $\varepsilon_{\frac{n}{2}} / \varepsilon_{n}$ |  | 5.048 | 4.308 | 4.089 | 4.027 | 4.009 |

We also calculated approximately the errors $\left\|S^{\prime}-y^{\prime}\right\|_{\infty}$ and $\left\|S^{\prime \prime}-y^{\prime \prime}\right\|_{\infty}$ on tenfold refined grid as in (8.1) which we denote by $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime}$ and $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}$, respectively. Results of numerical tests presented in Table 8.6 support the established theoretical ones.

The errors $\delta_{n}^{\prime \prime}=S^{\prime \prime}\left(z_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime}\left(z_{i}\right)$ were calculated in certain superconvergence points $z_{i}$. Results of numerical tests are presented in Table 8.7 and they confirm convergence rate $O\left(h^{2}\right)$ predicted by theory.

Table 8.6: Numerical results for $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime}$ and $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}$

| $n$ | 16 | 32 | 64 | 128 | 256 | 512 |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime}$ | 14.21 | 3.45 | $8.56 \cdot 10^{-1}$ | $2.14 \cdot 10^{-1}$ | $5.34 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | $1.34 \cdot 10^{-2}$ |
| $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime} / \varepsilon_{n}^{\prime}$ |  | 4.122 | 4.026 | 4.006 | 4.002 | 4.0004 |
| $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ | 888.117 | 344.384 | 151.128 | 70.645 | 34.129 | 16.771 |
| $\varepsilon_{\frac{n}{2}}^{\prime \prime} / \varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ |  | 2.579 | 2.279 | 2.139 | 2.070 | 2.035 |

Table 8.7: Numerical results for $\delta_{n}^{\prime \prime}=S^{\prime \prime}\left(z_{i}\right)-y^{\prime \prime}\left(z_{i}\right), i=1,2$.

|  | $z_{1}=\frac{a+b}{2}-\frac{h}{2}$ |  |  | $z_{2}=\frac{a+b}{2}+\frac{h}{2}$ |  |
| ---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $n$ | $\delta_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ | $\delta_{\frac{n}{2}}^{\prime \prime} / \delta_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ |  | $\delta_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ | $\delta_{\frac{n}{2}}^{\prime \prime} / \delta_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ |
| 16 | $-3.675 \cdot 10^{-1}$ |  |  | $-3.404 \cdot 10^{-1}$ |  |
| 32 | $-7.400 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | 4.966 |  | $-7.124 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | 4.778 |
| 64 | $-1.722 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | 4.297 |  | $-1.690 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | 4.216 |
| 128 | $-4.214 \cdot 10^{-3}$ | 4.087 |  | $-4.174 \cdot 10^{-3}$ | 4.049 |
| 256 | $-1.046 \cdot 10^{-3}$ | 4.028 |  | $-1.041 \cdot 10^{-3}$ | 4.009 |
| 512 | $-2.607 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | 4.012 |  | $-2.601 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | 4.002 |

### 8.4 Quadratic/linear rational spline collocation

Finally, we solved the test problem with quadratic/linear rational splines $S$ (see Chapter 7). Again, we solved the arising nonlinear system by Newton's method and the iterations were stopped at $\left\|m^{k}-m^{k-1}\right\|_{\infty} \leq 10^{-10}$ and $\left\|S^{k}-S^{k-1}\right\|_{\infty} \leq 10^{-10}$, $m^{k}$ being the sequence of approximations to the vector $m=\left(m_{0}, \ldots, m_{n}\right)$ and $S^{k}$ being the sequence of approximations to the vector $S=\left(S_{0}, \ldots, S_{n}\right)$. For comparison, we have solved the test problem with cubic spline collocation method, where we used the representation by second moments [39].

The errors $\delta_{n}$ for cubic splines and $\varepsilon_{n}$ for quadratic/linear rational splines were calculated as in (8.1). The results in Table 8.8 show that the error is approximately fifteen times less for quadratic/linear rational spline. Numbers in third row of Table 8.8 confirm the theoretical convergence rate for quadratic/linear rational spline collocation method.

Here we have functions

$$
g_{1}(x)=\left|\frac{y^{I V}-\frac{4}{3} \frac{\left(y^{\prime \prime \prime}\right)^{2}}{y^{\prime \prime}}}{q}(x)\right|=\frac{1}{x^{10}}, \quad g_{2}(x)=\left|\frac{y^{I V}}{q}(x)\right|=\frac{15}{x^{10}}
$$

and they are increasing if $x<0$. Then $g_{2}\left(-\frac{1}{5}\right) / g_{1}\left(-\frac{1}{5}\right)=15$ and this is consistent with numerical results presented in Table 8.8.

Table 8.8: Numerical results for $\delta_{n}$ and $\varepsilon_{n}$

| $n$ | 16 | 32 | 64 | 128 | 256 | 512 |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\delta_{n}$ | $36.18 \cdot 10^{-1}$ | $7.88 \cdot 10^{-1}$ | $1.87 \cdot 10^{-1}$ | $4.60 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | $1.14 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | $2.86 \cdot 10^{-3}$ |
| $\varepsilon_{n}$ | $2.04 \cdot 10^{-1}$ | $4.98 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | $1.23 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | $3.06 \cdot 10^{-3}$ | $7.63 \cdot 10^{-4}$ | $1.91 \cdot 10^{-4}$ |
| $\varepsilon_{\frac{n}{2}} / \varepsilon_{n}$ |  | 4.087 | 4.057 | 4.019 | 4.005 | 4.001 |

We also calculated approximately the errors $\left\|S^{\prime}-y^{\prime}\right\|_{\infty}$ and $\left\|S^{\prime \prime}-y^{\prime \prime}\right\|_{\infty}$ on tenfold refined grid as in (8.1) which we denote here by $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime}$ and $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}$, respectively. Results of numerical tests presented in Table 8.9 support the established theoretical ones.

Table 8.9: Numerical results for $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime}$ and $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}$

| $n$ | 16 | 32 | 64 | 128 | 256 | 512 |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime}$ | 4.18 | 1.18 | $3.06 \cdot 10^{-1}$ | $7.73 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | $1.94 \cdot 10^{-2}$ | $4.85 \cdot 10^{-3}$ |
| $\varepsilon_{\frac{n}{2}}^{\prime} / \varepsilon_{n}^{\prime}$ |  | 3.541 | 3.852 | 3.960 | 3.990 | 3.997 |
| $\varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ | 61.40 | 24.69 | 8.43 | 2.50 | $6.92 \cdot 10^{-1}$ | $1.82 \cdot 10^{-1}$ |
| $\varepsilon_{\frac{n}{2}}^{\prime \prime} / \varepsilon_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ |  | 2.487 | 2.928 | 3.377 | 3.608 | 3.797 |

## Bibliography

[1] J.H. Ahlberg and T. Ito. A collocation method for two-point boundary value problems. Math. Comp., 29 (1975), 761-776.
[2] J.H. Ahlberg and E.N. Nilson. Convergence properties of the spline fit. SIAM J., 11 (1963), 95-104.
[3] J.H. Ahlberg and E.N. Nilson and J. L. Walsh. Fundamental properties of generalized splines. Proc. Nat. Acad Sci. U.S.A., 52 (1964), 1412-1419.
[4] J.H. Ahlberg and E.N. Nilson and J. L. Walsh. Best approximation and convergence properties of higher-order spline approximations. J. Math. Mech., 14 (1965), 231-244.
[5] Z. Aktas and J.H. Stetter. A classification and survey of numerical methods for boundary value problems in ordinary differential equations. Int. J. Num. Meth. Engr., 11 (1977), 771-796.
[6] E.L. Albasiny and W.D. Hoskins. Cubic spline solutions to two-point boundary value problems. Comput. J., 12 (1969), 151-153.
[7] D. Archer and J.C. Diaz. A family of modified collocation methods for second order two-point boundary value problems. SIAM J. Numer. Anal., 15 (1978), 242-254.
[8] U.M. Ascher and R.M.M. Mattheij and R.D Russell. Numerical Solution of Boundary Value Problems for Ordinary Differnetial Equations. SIAM, Philadelphia, PA 1995.
[9] K.Atkinson. On the order of convergence of natural cubic spline interpolation problems, SIAM J. Numer. Anal., S., (1968), 89-101.
[10] W.G. Bickley. Piecewise cubic interpolation and two-point boundary problems. Comput. J., 11 (1968), 206-208.
[11] G. Birkhoff and C. de Boor. Error bounds for spline interpolation, J. Math. Mech., 13 (1964), 827-835.
[12] C. de Boor. A Practical Guide to Splines. New York: Springer-Verlag 2001.
[13] D. Brabston, H.B. Keller. A numerical method for singular two point boundary value problems. SIAM J. Numer. Anal., 14 (1977), 779-791.
[14] H.D. Burchard. Splines (with optimal knots) are better. J. Appl. Anal., 3 (1974), 309-319.
[15] J.M. Carnicer and W. Dahmen. Characterization of local strict convexity preserving interpolation methods by $C^{1}$ functions. J. Approx. Theory, 77 (1994), 2-30.
[16] J.M. Carnicer. Rational interpolation with a single variable pole. Numer. Algorithms, 3 (1992), 125-132.
[17] L. Collatz. The Numerical Treatment of Differential Equations. Springer, Berlin 1960.
[18] R. Delbourgo and J.A. Gregory. $C^{2}$ - rational quadratic spline interpolation to monotonic data. IMA J. Numer. Anal., 3 (1983), 141-152.
[19] R. Delbourgo and J.A. Gregory. Shape preserving piecewise rational interpolation. SIAM J. Sci. Stat. Comput., 6 (1985), 967-976.
[20] L. Fox. The Numerical Solution of Two-Point Boundary Value Problems in Ordinary Differential Equations. Oxford University Press, London 1957.
[21] F.N. Fritsch and R.E. Carlson. Monotone piecewise cubic interpolation. SIAM J. Numer. Anal., 17 (1980), 235-246.
[22] D.J. Fyfe. The use of cubic splines in the solution of two-point boundary value problems. Comput. J., 12 (1968), 188-192.
[23] D.J. Fyfe. The use of cubic splines in the solution of certain fourth order boundary value problems. Comput. J., 13 (1970), 204-205.
[24] J.A. Gregory. Shape preserving spline interpolation. Comput. Aided Geom. Design, 18 (1986), 53-57.
[25] E. Ideon and P. Oja. Linear/linear rational spline interpolation. Math. Model. Anal., 15 (2010), 447-455.
[26] E. Ideon and P. Oja. Quadratic/linear rational spline interpolation. Math. Model. Anal., 18 (2013), 250-259.
[27] E. Ideon and P. Oja. Linear/linear rational spline collocation for linear boundary value problems (preprint).
[28] H.B. Keller. Numerical Methods for Two-point Boundary-value Problems. Waltham: Blaisdell 1968.
[29] H.B. Keller. Numerical Solution of Two Point Boundary Value Problems. SIAM, Philadelphia 1976.
[30] A.K.A. Khalifa and J.C. Eilbeck. Collocation with quadratic and cubic splines. IMA J. Numer. Anal., 2 (1982), 111-121.
[31] L.M. Kocic and G.V. Milovanovic, Shape preserving approximations by polynomials and splines. Comp. Math. with Appl., 33 (1997), 59-97.
[32] B.I. Kvasov. Quadratic spline interpolation. Acad. Nauk SSSR, Sib. Otdelenie, Inst. Teoret. i Prikl. Mekh., Novosibirsk, Preprint no 3, 1981 (in Russian).
[33] B.I. Kvasov. Numerical differentiation and integration on the basis of interpolation parabolic splines. Chisl. Metody Mekh. Sploshn. Sredy, 14 (1983), 68-80 (in Russian).
[34] B.I. Kvasov. Interpolation by rational parabolic splines. Chisl. Metody Mekh. Sploshn. Sredy, 15 (1984), 60-70 (in Russian).
[35] P. Oja. On the solution of boundary value problems by quadratic splines. Proc. Estonian Acad. Sci. Phys. Math., 39 (1990), 335-343 (in Russian).
[36] P. Oja. Second-degree rational spline interpolation. Proc. Estonian Acad. Sci. Phys. Math., 45 (1996), 38-45.
[37] P. Oja. Low degree rational spline interpolation. BIT, 37 (1998), 901-909.
[38] P. Oja. Comonotone adaptive interpolation splines. BIT, 42 (2002), 842-855.
[39] P. Oja and A. Reitsekas. Collocation and subdomain methods with quadratic and cubic splines for boundary value problems. Proc. Estonian Acad. Sci. Phys. Math., 36 (1987), 118-128 (in Russian).
[40] J.M. Ortega and W.C. Rheinboldt. Iterative Solutions of Nonlinear Equations in Several Variables. New York: Academic Press 1970.
[41] E. Passow and J.A. Roulier. Monotone and convex spline interpolations. SIAM J. Numer. Anal., 14 (1977), 904-909.
[42] S. Pruess. Interpolation schemes for collocation solutions of two point boundary value problems. SIAM J. Sci. Stat. Comp., 7 (1986), 322-333.
[43] G.W. Reddien. Projection methods for two point BVP. SIAM Review, 22 (1980), 156-171.
[44] R.D. Russell and L.F. Shampine. A collocation method for boundary value problems. Num. Math., 19 (1972), 1-28.
[45] R.D. Russell. Collocation for systems of boundary value problems. Num. Math., 23 (1974), 119-133.
[46] R. Schaback. Spezielle rationale Splinefunktionen. J. Approx. Theory, 7 (1973), 281-292 (in German).
[47] R. Schaback. Adaptive rational splines. Constr. Approx., 6 (1990), 167-179.
[48] J.W. Schmidt and W. Hess. Positive interpolation with rational quadratic splines. Computing, 38 (1987), 261-267.
[49] I.J. Schoenberg. Contributions to the problem of approximation of equidistant data by analytic functions. Quart. Appl. Math, 4 (1946), 45-99, 112-141.
[50] I.J. Schoenberg. On interpolation by spline functions and its minimal properties. Int. Sere Numer. Anal., 5 (1964), 109-129.
[51] I.J. Schoenberg. On trigonometric spline interpolation. J. Math. Mech., 13 (1964), 795-826.
[52] I.J. Schoenberg. Spline interpolation and the higher derivatives, Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. U.S.A., 51 (1964), 24-28.
[53] M.H. Schultz. Spline Analysis. Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall 1973.
[54] L.L. Schumaker. Toward a constructive theory of generalized spline functions. Bohmer, Meinardus, and Schempp (1976), 265-331.
[55] L.L. Schumaker. Spline Functions: Basic Theory. Robert E. Kriger Publishing Co., Inc., Malabar, Florida 1993.
[56] R.F. Sincovec. On the relative efficiency of higher order collocation methods for solving two-point boundary value problems. SIAM J. Numer. Anal., 14 (1977), 112-123.
[57] S.B. Stechkin and Yu.N. Subbotin. Splines in Numerical Mathematics. Nauka 1976 (in Russian).
[58] Yu.S. Zavyalov, B.I. Kvasov and V.L. Miroshnicenko. Methods of Splinefunctions. Nauka 1980 (in Russian).
[59] G. Vainikko. On convergence and stability of the collocation method. Differencial'nye Uravnenija, 1 (1965), 244-254 (in Russian).
[60] G. Vainikko. On convergence of the collocation method for nonlinear differential equations. USSR Comp. Math. and Math. Phys., 6 (1966), 35-42 (in Russian).
[61] H. Werner. Tschebyscheff-Approximation mit einer Klasse rationaler SplineFunktionen, J. Approximation Theory, 10 (1974), 74-92 (in German).

## Kokkuvõte

## Rajaülesannete lahendamine ratsionaalsplainidega kollokatsioonimeetodil

Paljud matemaatika, füüsika ja teiste teadusalade probleemid on formuleeritavad rajaülesannete kujul. Traditsioonilised meetodid rajaülesannete lahendamiseks on võrgumeetod, mis annab ainult diskreetse lahendi, ja polünomiaalsete splainidega kollokatsioonimeetod.

Käesolevas töös vaadeldakse hariliku teist järku diferentsiaalvõrrandi rajaülesande

$$
\begin{gathered}
y^{\prime \prime}(x)+p(x) y^{\prime}(x)+q(x) y(x)=f(x), \quad x \in(a, b), \\
y(a)=\alpha, \quad y(b)=\beta
\end{gathered}
$$

lahendamist kollokatsioonimeetodil kasutades lineaar/lineaar ja ruut/lineaar ratsionaalsplaine.

Eeldatakse, et ülesandel on olemas lahend, mis on piisava siledusega ja $p, q, f$ on pidevad ning $q(x) \leq q<0, x \in(a, b)$. Sellisel juhul on lahend ühene, mis on ka peatükis 6 tõestatud.

Vaatleme ühtlase jaotusega lõiku $[a, b]$ punktidega $x_{i}=a+i h, i=0, \ldots, n$, $h=(b-a) / n, n \in \mathbb{N}$. Rajaülesande lahendamist ruut-ja kuupsplainidega kollokatsioonimeetodil on uurinud mitmed autorid. On teada ka, et ruutsplainide korral põhineb koonduvuskiiruse $O\left(h^{2}\right)$ tõestus interpoleerimise superkoonduvusel [30, 35, 39]. Kuupsplainidega interpolatsiooniülesandes on antud sõlmedes $x_{i}$, $i=0, \ldots, n$, väärtused $y_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n$, ja otsitakse splaini $S$, mis rahuldaks tingimusi $S\left(x_{i}\right)=y_{i}, i=0, \ldots, n$. Ruutsplainidega interpolatsiooniülesandes on antud väärtused $\bar{y}_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$, sõlmedes $\xi_{i}=\left(x_{i-1}+x_{i}\right) / 2, i=1, \ldots, n$, ja nõutakse, et $S\left(\xi_{i}\right)=\bar{y}_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$. Lineaar/lineaar ratsionaalsplainidega interpolatsiooniülesande formuleering on sama nagu ruutsplainidega ja ruut/lineaar ratsionaalsplainidega interpolatsiooniülesandel nagu kuupsplainidega. Interpoleerimise korral on teada, et ratsionaalsplainid lähendavad mõningaid funktsioone paremini kui polünomiaalsed splainid. Seetõttu võivad ratsionaalsplainid anda mõnedes rajaülesannetes paremaid tulemusi. Käesoleva töö põhiprobleemiks ongi uurida rajaülesannete lahendamist lineaar/lineaar ja ruut/lineaar ratsionaalsplainidega kollokatsioonimeetodil. Tulemusi võrreldakse vastavalt ruut-ja kuupsplain-kollokatsioonimeetodite tulemustega.

Kuna lineaar/lineaar ratsionaalsplain on monotoonne ja ruut/lineaar ratsionaalsplain $S$ (või $-S$ ) on kumer lõigus $[a, b]$, siis on mõtet rajaülesannet selliste splainidega ligikaudselt lahendada vaid siis, kui on teada, et rajaülesande täpne lahend on sama omadusega.

Kui vaadeldav ruut-ja kuupsplainidega rajaülesanne on lineaarne, siis ratsionaalsplainidega ülesanne on mittelineaarne, sest see viib mittelineaarse võrrandisüsteemi lahendamiseni.

Käesolev doktoritöö koosneb 8 peatükist. Esimeses peatükis antakse lühike ülevaade tööst, rajaülesande ja ratsionaalsplainide ajaloost ning tutvustatakse teiste autorite artikleid antud valdkonna kohta.

Teises peatükis tutvustatakse lineaar/lineaar ratsionaalsplaine, kirjeldatakse nende vabade parameetrite arvu ja üldisi omadusi. Töös antakse 3 erinevat esitust: kõigepealt punktides $x_{i}$ leitud esimeste momentide ja splaini väärtuste kaudu punktides $\xi_{i}$, teisena osalõikude keskpunktis arvutatud tuletise ja splaini väärtuste kaudu punktides $x_{i}$ ning viimaseks splaini väärtuste abil punktides $x_{i}$ ja $\xi_{i}$.

Kaks esitust ruut/lineaar ratsionaalsplainide jaoks leiab töö kolmandast peatükist. Nimelt on toodud esitus esimeste momentide ja splaini väärtuste abil sõlmedes $x_{i}$ ja samuti teiste momentide ja splaini sõlmväärtuste kaudu. Samast peatükist leiab ka üldisi tulemusi ruut/lineaar ratsionaalsplainide kohta.

Töö neljas peatükk käsitleb lineaar/lineaar ratsionaalsplainidega interpoleerimist. Alustatakse interpolatsiooniülesande tutvustamisega ja kasutatakse splaini esitust väärtuste kaudu. Näidatakse, et interpoleerivate lineaar/lineaar ratsionaalsplainide $S$ ja piisavalt sileda funktsiooni $y$ jaoks kehtib $\left\|S\left(x_{i}\right)-y\left(x_{i}\right)\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{4}\right)$ ühtlase jaotusega lõigus punktidega $x_{i}=a+i h, i=0, \ldots, n$. Tõestatakse ka $h^{3}$ järku superkoonduvus splaini $S$ esimeste tuletiste ja $h^{2}$ järku teiste tuletiste jaoks teatud punktides. Sarnased tulemused ruutsplainide kohta on teada varasemast, võrdlus saadud lineaar/lineaar ratsionaalsplainide tulemustega on toodud peatüki lõpus.

Viies peatükk on pühendatud interpoleerimisele ruut/lineaar ratsionaalsplainidega. Siin kasutatakse splaini esitust teiste momentide ja väärtuste kaudu. Tõestatakse interpoleerivate ruut/lineaar ratsionaalsplainide $S$ ja piisavalt sileda funktsiooni $y$ jaoks ühtlase jaotusega lõigus $h^{4}$ järku superkoonduvus splaini esimeste tuletiste, $h^{3}$ järku teiste tuletiste ja $h^{2}$ järku kolmandate tuletiste jaoks teatud punktides. Saadud tulemusi võrreldakse kuupsplainide tulemustega, mis on varasemast teada.

Kuuendas peatükis on uuritud kollokatsioonimeetodit lineaar/lineaar ratsionaalsplainidega. Peatüki algusest leiab meetodi kirjelduse ja võrdluse ruutsplainkollokatsioonimeetodiga. Edasi on tõestatud $O\left(h^{2}\right)$ koonduvuskiirus ühtlase jaotusega lõigus lineaar/lineaar ratsionaalsplainidega kollokatsioonimeetodi jaoks. Tõestus põhineb splainidega interpoleerimise superkoonduvuse tulemustele. Samuti on saadud koonduvuskiirused $\left\|S^{\prime}-y^{\prime}\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{2}\right)$ ja $\left\|S^{\prime \prime}-y^{\prime \prime}\right\|_{\infty}=O(h)$ lineaar/lineaar ratsionaalsplaini $S$ ja rangelt monotoonse rajaülesande lahendi $y$ korral. Osutub, et kollokatsioonipunktides toimub splaini teiste tuletiste korral $h^{2}$ järku superkoondumine.

Seitsmendas peatükis vaadeldakse ruut/lineaar ratsionaalsplainidega kollo-
katsioonimeetodit. Nagu eelmises peatükis, alustatakse ka siin meetodi kirjeldamisega ning võrreldakse seda kuupsplain-kollokatsioonimeetodiga. Uurimisel kasutatakse splaini esitust esimeste momentide ja väärtuste kaudu ning tõestatakse, et ruut/lineaar ratsionaalsplainide $S$ jaoks ühtlase jaotusega lõigus rajaülesande lahendi $y$, mis on rangelt kumer (või rangelt nõgus), korral kehtib $\|S-y\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{2}\right)$. Samuti näidatakse $\left\|S^{\prime}-y^{\prime}\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{2}\right)$ ja $\left\|S^{\prime \prime}-y^{\prime \prime}\right\|_{\infty}=O\left(h^{2}\right)$ kehtivust.

Viimasest peatükist leiab arvuliste katsete tulemused nii interpolatsiooni- kui rajaülesande jaoks. On võetud tavaline lihtne funktsioon ning näidatud, et selle korral annavad ratsionaalsplainid võrreldes ruut-ja kuupsplainidega paremaid tulemusi. Saadud tulemused on ka täielikus kooskõlas töös toodud teoreetilistega.

Peatüki 4 tulemused on avaldatud artiklis [25] ja peatüki 5 tulemused artiklis [26]. Publitseerimisele on suunatud peatüki 6 tulemused [27] ning dissertatsioonis esitatut on tutvustatud viiel rahvusvahelisel teaduskonverentsil.

## Acknowledgements

First and foremost, I would like to express my deepest gratitude to my supervisor Peeter Oja. I thank him for all his advice, patience, support and invaluable help during my university studies.

I thank Gennadi Vainikko and other participants for useful discussions in our seminars and I am grateful to all of the Institute of Mathematics. Many thanks to Malle Fischer for her guidance.

I also wish to express my gratitude to my colleagues at the Estonian University of Life Sciences for their support.

Finally, I am very grateful to my family and friends, especially to my mother and father for their encouragement, understanding and love which have helped me during the years of studying. Special thanks go to Janek for being there for me.

## Curriculum Vitae

Name: Erge Ideon
Born: February 15, 1986, Rapla, Estonia
Citizenship: Estonian
Address: Institute of Mathematics, J. Liivi 2, 50409 Tartu, Estonia
Phone: +372 7376426
E-mail: Erge.Ideon@ut.ee

## Education

1993-2001 Hagudi Basic School
1994-2001 Rapla Music School, violin
2001-2004 Rapla Co-Educational Secondary School
2004-2007 University of Tartu, Faculty of Mathematics and Informatics, bachelor student in mathematics
2007-2009 University of Tartu, Faculty of Mathematics and Informatics, master student in mathematics
2009-2013 University of Tartu, Faculty of Mathematics and Informatics, PhD student in mathematics

## Professional employment

since 2011 Estonian University of Life Sciences, lecturer

## Scientific work

The main field of interest is solving boundary value problems with spline collocation method. Results have been published in 2 papers and one paper has been submitted for publication. Results have also been presented in the conferences:
"The 13th International Conference on Mathematical Modelling and Analysis and 3rd International Conference on Approximation Methods and Orthogonal Expansions" in Kääriku, Estonia (2008),
"The 15th International Conference Mathematical Modelling and Analysis" in Druskininkai, Lithuania (2010),
"The 16th International Conference on Mathematical Modelling and Analysis" in Sigulda, Latvia (2011),
"International Conference on Optimization and Analysis of Structures (OAS 2011)" in Tartu, Estonia (2011),
"The 17th International Conference on Mathematical Modelling and Analysis" in Tallinn, Estonia (2012).

## Elulookirjeldus

Ees- ja perekonnanimi: Erge Ideon
Sünniaeg ja -koht: 15. veebruar 1986, Rapla, Eesti
Kodakondsus: Eesti
Aadress: TÜ matemaatika instituut, J.Liivi 2, 50409, Tartu, Eesti
Telefon: +372 7376426
E-mail: Erge.Ideon@ut.ee

## Haridus

1993-2001 Hagudi Põhikool
1994-2001 Rapla Muusikakool, viiul
2001-2004 Rapla Ühisgümnaasium
2004-2007 Tartu Ülikooli matemaatika-informaatikateaduskond, bakalaureuseõpe
2007-2009 Tartu Ülikooli matemaatika-informaatikateaduskond, magistriõpe
2009-2013 Tartu Ülikooli matemaatika-informaatikateaduskond, doktoriõpe

## Erialane teenistuskäik

alates 2011 Eesti Maaülikooli Tehnikainstituut, lektor

## Teaduslik tegevus

Peamine uurimisvaldkond on rajaülesannete lahendamine splainidega kollokatsioonimeetodil. Tulemused on publitseeritud kahes teadusartiklis, üks artikkel on esitatud publitseerimiseks. Tulemustega on esinetud viiel teaduskonverentsil:
'"The 13th International Conference on Mathematical Modelling and Analysis and 3rd International Conference on Approximation Methods and Orthogonal Expansions" Käärikul Eestis (2008),
"The 15th International Conference Mathematical Modelling and Analysis" Druskininkais Leedus (2010),
"The 16th International Conference on Mathematical Modelling and Analysis" Siguldas Lätis (2011),
"International Conference on Optimization and Analysis of Structures (OAS 2011)" Tartus Eestis (2011),
"The 17th International Conference on Mathematical Modelling and Analysis" Tallinnas Eestis (2012).

## List of publications

1. E. Ideon and P. Oja. Linear/linear rational spline interpolation. Math. Model. Anal., 15 (2010), 447-455.
2. E. Ideon and P. Oja. Quadratic/linear rational spline interpolation. Math. Model. Anal., 18 (2013), 250-259.
3. E. Ideon and P. Oja. Linear/linear rational spline collocation for linear boundary value problems (preprint).

## DISSERTATIONES MATHEMATICAE UNIVERSITATIS TARTUENSIS

1. Mati Heinloo. The design of nonhomogeneous spherical vessels, cylindrical tubes and circular discs. Tartu, 1991, 23 p.
2. Boris Komrakov. Primitive actions and the Sophus Lie problem. Tartu, 1991, 14 p.
3. Jaak Heinloo. Phenomenological (continuum) theory of turbulence. Tartu, 1992, 47 p.
4. Ants Tauts. Infinite formulae in intuitionistic logic of higher order. Tartu, 1992, 15 p.
5. Tarmo Soomere. Kinetic theory of Rossby waves. Tartu, 1992, 32 p.
6. Jüri Majak. Optimization of plastic axisymmetric plates and shells in the case of Von Mises yield condition. Tartu, 1992, 32 p.
7. Ants Aasma. Matrix transformations of summability and absolute summability fields of matrix methods. Tartu, 1993, 32 p .
8. Helle Hein. Optimization of plastic axisymmetric plates and shells with piece-wise constant thickness. Tartu, 1993, 28 p.
9. Toomas Kiho. Study of optimality of iterated Lavrentiev method and its generalizations. Tartu, 1994, 23 p.
10. Arne Kokk. Joint spectral theory and extension of non-trivial multiplicative linear functionals. Tartu, 1995, 165 p .
11. Toomas Lepikult. Automated calculation of dynamically loaded rigidplastic structures. Tartu, 1995, 93 p, (in Russian).
12. Sander Hannus. Parametrical optimization of the plastic cylindrical shells by taking into account geometrical and physical nonlinearities. Tartu, 1995, 74 p, (in Russian).
13. Sergei Tupailo. Hilbert's epsilon-symbol in predicative subsystems of analysis. Tartu, 1996, 134 p.
14. Enno Saks. Analysis and optimization of elastic-plastic shafts in torsion. Tartu, 1996, 96 p.
15. Valdis Laan. Pullbacks and flatness properties of acts. Tartu, 1999, 90 p.
16. Märt Põldvere. Subspaces of Banach spaces having Phelps' uniqueness property. Tartu, 1999, 74 p.
17. Jelena Ausekle. Compactness of operators in Lorentz and Orlicz sequence spaces. Tartu, 1999, 72 p.
18. Krista Fischer. Structural mean models for analyzing the effect of compliance in clinical trials. Tartu, 1999, 124 p.
19. Helger Lipmaa. Secure and efficient time-stamping systems. Tartu, 1999, 56 p.
20. Jüri Lember. Consistency of empirical k-centres. Tartu, 1999, 148 p.
21. Ella Puman. Optimization of plastic conical shells. Tartu, 2000, 102 p.
22. Kaili Müürisep. Eesti keele arvutigrammatika: süntaks. Tartu, 2000, 107 lk .
23. Varmo Vene. Categorical programming with inductive and coinductive types. Tartu, 2000, 116 p.
24. Olga Sokratova. $\Omega$-rings, their flat and projective acts with some applications. Tartu, 2000, 120 p.
25. Maria Zeltser. Investigation of double sequence spaces by soft and hard analitical methods. Tartu, 2001, 154 p.
26. Ernst Tungel. Optimization of plastic spherical shells. Tartu, 2001, 90 p.
27. Tiina Puolakainen. Eesti keele arvutigrammatika: morfoloogiline ühestamine. Tartu, 2001, 138 p.
28. Rainis Haller. $M(r, s)$-inequalities. Tartu, 2002, 78 p .
29. Jan Villemson. Size-efficient interval time stamps. Tartu, 2002, 82 p.
30. Eno Tõnisson. Solving of expession manipulation exercises in computer algebra systems. Tartu, 2002, 92 p.
31. Mart Abel. Structure of Gelfand-Mazur algebras. Tartu, 2003. 94 p.
32. Vladimir Kuchmei. Affine completeness of some ockham algebras. Tartu, 2003. 100 p.
33. Olga Dunajeva. Asymptotic matrix methods in statistical inference problems. Tartu 2003. 78 p.
34. Mare Tarang. Stability of the spline collocation method for volterra integro-differential equations. Tartu 2004. 90 p.
35. Tatjana Nahtman. Permutation invariance and reparameterizations in linear models. Tartu 2004. 91 p.
36. Märt Möls. Linear mixed models with equivalent predictors. Tartu 2004. 70 p.
37. Kristiina Hakk. Approximation methods for weakly singular integral equations with discontinuous coefficients. Tartu 2004, 137 p.
38. Meelis Käärik. Fitting sets to probability distributions. Tartu 2005, 90 p.
39. Inga Parts. Piecewise polynomial collocation methods for solving weakly singular integro-differential equations. Tartu 2005, 140 p .
40. Natalia Saealle. Convergence and summability with speed of functional series. Tartu 2005, 91 p.
41. Tanel Kaart. The reliability of linear mixed models in genetic studies. Tartu 2006, 124 p.
42. Kadre Torn. Shear and bending response of inelastic structures to dynamic load. Tartu 2006, 142 p.
43. Kristel Mikkor. Uniform factorisation for compact subsets of Banach spaces of operators. Tartu 2006, 72 p.
44. Darja Saveljeva. Quadratic and cubic spline collocation for Volterra integral equations. Tartu 2006, 117 p.
45. Kristo Heero. Path planning and learning strategies for mobile robots in dynamic partially unknown environments. Tartu 2006, 123 p.
46. Annely Mürk. Optimization of inelastic plates with cracks. Tartu 2006. 137 p.
47. Annemai Raidjõe. Sequence spaces defined by modulus functions and superposition operators. Tartu 2006, 97 p.
48. Olga Panova. Real Gelfand-Mazur algebras. Tartu 2006, 82 p.
49. Härmel Nestra. Iteratively defined transfinite trace semantics and program slicing with respect to them. Tartu 2006, 116 p .
50. Margus Pihlak. Approximation of multivariate distribution functions. Tartu 2007, 82 p.
51. Ene Käärik. Handling dropouts in repeated measurements using copulas. Tartu 2007, 99 p.
52. Artur Sepp. Affine models in mathematical finance: an analytical approach. Tartu 2007, 147 p.
53. Marina Issakova. Solving of linear equations, linear inequalities and systems of linear equations in interactive learning environment. Tartu 2007, 170 p .
54. Kaja Sõstra. Restriction estimator for domains. Tartu 2007, 104 p.
55. Kaarel Kaljurand. Attempto controlled English as a Semantic Web language. Tartu 2007, 162 p.
56. Mart Anton. Mechanical modeling of IPMC actuators at large deformations. Tartu 2008, 123 p.
57. Evely Leetma. Solution of smoothing problems with obstacles. Tartu 2009, 81 p.
58. Ants Kaasik. Estimating ruin probabilities in the Cramér-Lundberg model with heavy-tailed claims. Tartu 2009, 139 p.
59. Reimo Palm. Numerical Comparison of Regularization Algorithms for Solving Ill-Posed Problems. Tartu 2010, 105 p.
60. Indrek Zolk. The commuting bounded approximation property of Banach spaces. Tartu 2010, 107 p.
61. Jüri Reimand. Functional analysis of gene lists, networks and regulatory systems. Tartu 2010, 153 p.
62. Ahti Peder. Superpositional Graphs and Finding the Description of Structure by Counting Method. Tartu 2010, 87 p.
63. Marek Kolk. Piecewise Polynomial Collocation for Volterra Integral Equations with Singularities. Tartu 2010, 134 p.
64. Vesal Vojdani. Static Data Race Analysis of Heap-Manipulating C Programs. Tartu 2010, 137 p.
65. Larissa Roots. Free vibrations of stepped cylindrical shells containing cracks. Tartu 2010, 94 p.
66. Mark Fišel. Optimizing Statistical Machine Translation via Input Modification. Tartu 2011, 104 p.
67. Margus Niitsoo. Black-box Oracle Separation Techniques with Applications in Time-stamping. Tartu 2011, 174 p.
68. Olga Liivapuu. Graded q-differential algebras and algebraic models in noncommutative geometry. Tartu 2011, 112 p .
69. Aleksei Lissitsin. Convex approximation properties of Banach spaces. Tartu 2011, 107 p.
70. Lauri Tart. Morita equivalence of partially ordered semigroups. Tartu 2011, 101 p.
71. Siim Karus. Maintainability of XML Transformations. Tartu 2011, 142 p.
72. Margus Treumuth. A Framework for Asynchronous Dialogue Systems: Concepts, Issues and Design Aspects. Tartu 2011, 95 p.
73. Dmitri Lepp. Solving simplification problems in the domain of exponents, monomials and polynomials in interactive learning environment T-algebra. Tartu 2011, 202 p.
74. Meelis Kull. Statistical enrichment analysis in algorithms for studying gene regulation. Tartu 2011, 151 p.
75. Nadežda Bazunova. Differential calculus $d^{3}=0$ on binary and ternary associative algebras. Tartu 2011, 99 p.
76. Natalja Lepik. Estimation of domains under restrictions built upon generalized regression and synthetic estimators. Tartu 2011, 133 p.
77. Bingsheng Zhang. Efficient cryptographic protocols for secure and private remote databases. Tartu 2011, 206 p.
78. Reina Uba. Merging business process models. Tartu 2011, 166 p.
79. Uuno Puus. Structural performance as a success factor in software development projects - Estonian experience. Tartu 2012, 106 p.
80. Marje Johanson. $M(r, s)$-ideals of compact operators. Tartu 2012, 103 p .
81. Georg Singer. Web search engines and complex information needs. Tartu 2012, 218 p.
82. Vitali Retšnoi. Vector fields and Lie group representations. Tartu 2012, 108 p.
83. Dan Bogdanov. Sharemind: programmable secure computations with practical applications. Tartu 2013, 191 p.
84. Jevgeni Kabanov. Towards a more productive Java EE ecosystem. Tartu 2013, 151 p.
